

## Chapter 501

### Profound Blossom Sect's Disciple Examination 2

"T-There must have been a mistake! This is a test of talent, right?! I have reached the True Spirit Realm at 20 years old! I am clearly not your average Cultivator!" Wei Lihuang refused to accept the results and refuted it.

"I'm sorry, but there is no mistake. Although your cultivation may be above average, we do not judge one's talent just by their cultivation base." Su Liqing said to him.

When the spectators had realized that Wei Lihuang had failed the third exam, they were all dumbfounded.

"How did Wei Lihuang fail the talent test? He's definitely a cultivation genius!"

"Nobody besides the Profound Blossom Sect knows how these exams truly work, so we might never find out."

"D-Damn it!" Wei Lihuang was fuming on the stage. However, as angry as he was feeling, he did not dare to do anything rash when there were multiple experts — including the Xie Family — watching everything.

A few moments later, he stomped out of the stage, disappearing from the examination area immediately afterward.

"Just what kind of water is in that bowl? It's clearly not ordinary water." Bai Lihua asked out loud.

However, the other experts there shook their heads, as they had no idea.

A few minutes later, another individual managed to step onto the third stage, and he was a 17-year-old young man with his cultivation base only at the second level of the Elementary Spirit Realm.

"He's already 17 years old, yet he's only at the second level of the Elementary Spirit Realm. If even a genius like Wei Lihuang cannot pass the exam, there's no way in hell this young man could possibly pass."

The people there have already decided in their mind that this young man would definitely fail the exam.

However, a few moments later, after the young man mixed his blood with the bowl of water, the spectators there were shocked to see the water turn into a pale red color for a few seconds before returning to a clear color!

"Congratulations, you have passed." Su Liqing said to him.

"What?! How did he pass the exam with that kind of cultivation base at his age?! There is something wrong here!"

Not just the spectators but even the young man himself looked dumbfounded by the results, as he had almost no hope of passing. "I-I passed...?" he mumbled to himself.

Su Liqing nodded with a smile and said, "Yes. You may head to the fourth stage for the final exam."

The young man nodded and approached the fourth stage, where Su Yang was casually standing there with his eyes closed.

Once the young man stood on the stage, Su Yang opened his eyes and said, "Lin Na, come spar with this young man."

"Eh? Me?"

Lin Na pointed at herself with a baffled face.

"I-I coming!"

She jumped onto the stage a few moments later.

"Limit yourself to the Elementary Spirit Realm, but fight him seriously," said Su Yang.

Lin Na nodded her head, and the two of them began fighting on the stage shortly after.

The fight lasted less than a minute, and as everyone there had expected, Lin Na won the fight effortlessly.

"What do you think?" Lin Na asked Su Yang after the fight ended.

Su Yang gazed at the young man for a moment before nodding, "You pass."

When the young man heard such words, his eyes flowed with tears, and he bowed to Su Yang, "Thank you, Sect Master! This disciple will not let the Sect down!"

"Take this and go home for now to prepare. Come back in 7 days, when the disciple examination is finished." Su Yang tossed him a badge that identified him as a disciple of the Profound Blossom Sect.

"Yes, Sect Master!" The young man bowed to him again before quickly leaving the stage.

However, as the young man tried to leave the area, he was surrounded by the spectators there.

"Congratulations, young man! What is your name?"

"Handsome brother, why don't we celebrate your achievements in a restaurant?"

"I am the head of the Huang Family from Smoke City. If you need any help in the future, you may come to me for help!"

The young man was baffled to see people already kissing his ass before he could even wear the Profound Blossom Sect's uniform. It was a feeling he has never experienced before.

"P-Please excuse me... I have to return to my family first..." The young man said before running away.

Meanwhile, when the other participants saw that someone had finally managed to pass the seemingly impossible exam, their enthusiasm soared and their hope was restored, as it was clear to them that it was really possible to pass the exam.

This was especially true for those participants that come from common families or have started late in the cultivation path. If a 17-year-old at the 2nd level Elementary Spirit Realm could pass the exam, then it also meant that they also have a chance.

Many hours later, after examining over five thousand participants, only 38 people had managed to pass the exam and become a disciple of the Profound Blossom Sect.

"The amount of people that have passed the examination is less than 1%... Not even the Divine Sword Sect, one of the strictest Sects out there, has such a low rate of success."

"Even though they won the Regional Tournament and have many heaven-defying geniuses, aren't they being too strict and demanding? No matter how good a Sect is, if they don't have any disciples, it won't do them any good."

Some people there felt that the Profound Blossom Sect were being too greedy and picky with their disciples, especially given their current situation that desperately needed new disciples. At this rate, they won't even accept half of their limit of 1,000 disciples.

Sometime later, a beautiful young lady that had just walked onto the first stage caught Su Yang's attention, something that hasn't happened since the beginning of the examination.

The young lady quickly noticed Su Yang's gaze as she was also glancing at him this entire time. When she realized that he was looking at her and that he might remember her, she blushed and bowed her head at him before she touched the totems.

"19 years old, first-level True Spirit Realm."

### **Chapter 502 Profound Blossom Sect's Disciple Examination 3**

"Do you know that girl, Su Yang?" Lin Na noticed him staring at this new participant and asked him.

"Yes, we had a few moments together in the past," he nodded.

"Do you think she will pass the exam?"

"Who knows," he responded with a slight smile.

Meanwhile, this young lady sat in the red mist, desperately fighting the Demon Heart Pill's influence within her mind.

Thirty seconds later, she managed to resist the Demon Heart Pill and pass the second exam along with three other individuals.

On the third stage, those three individuals went first, and unsurprisingly, their blood caused no changes to the bowl of water, failing on the spot.

When the young lady mixed her blood with the water, the water turned into a pale red color, before turning into a slightly darker red over time.

"You pass." Su Liqing said to her with a smile.

The young lady bowed to her before walking onto the final stage.

A few moments later, she stood a few meters away from Su Yang and Lin Na on the fourth stage.

And just as Lin Na prepared to fight her, Su Yang tapped on her shoulder from behind and said, "Let me handle this one."

Lin Na nodded and stepped back without saying anything.

"It's been a while, Su Yang." The young lady said to him with a smile. "You have changed significantly since the last time I saw you. Though, I cannot say the same for myself."

"You've become prettier, Lu Lifen," he said with a handsome smile.

"And you are as slick as ever."

Indeed, this pretty young lady was Lu Lifen, someone he'd met at the Chamber of Embrace when he was still a mere Inner Court Disciple.

And not only did he pluck her Pure Yin Essence, but he also spent two whole days with her.

Lu Lifen continued to speak, "I didn't tell you this before, but it was my Father's idea to send me to the Profound Blossom Sect to look for a partner. I wasn't aware of this at that time, but it was actually a form of punishment for me, who refused to accept a husband despite my parents' pressure."

"He wanted to make me angry by making me feel humiliation, and I must say, it'd worked perfectly. Of course, he didn't actually expect me to give my body away like that."

"In other words, my Father didn't plan for me to find a partner at the Profound Blossom Sect. But alas, I met you, and I gave my body to you."

"I didn't mention this to my Father when I returned home since I did not find a husband, and he continued to set up marriage meetings for me. Eventually, he found out the truth when he asked Elder Lu, who was with me at the Chamber of Embrace."

"My Father was livid when he found out that I was no longer a maiden, but there was nothing he could do to change that fact, so he accepted the results and no longer bothered me to find a husband, as women that are no longer pure are not desired by big families. Of course, this allowed me to focus on my cultivation wholeheartedly, and I cannot thank you enough for that, Su Yang."

"By the way, although it is also my Father's idea to have me join the Profound Blossom Sect, I would've still come here even if he didn't say anything."

Lu Lifen suddenly pointed her fingers at him and said, "Su Yang, I am going to become a disciple of the Profound Blossom Sect, and then I am going to make you take responsibility for taking my chastity by making you my husband!"

Su Yang showed a calm smile after hearing her words and said, "I will look forward to it."

Lu Lifen nodded and continued with a smile on her beautiful face, "After this is all over, why don't we drink some tea together? Just like last time."

"Sounds good."

The two of them began fighting each other a few moments later.

Sometime later, Lu Lifen collapsed on the ground with an exhausted face.

Su Yang approached her and extended his hands for her.

"Congratulations. You have achieved the first part. Now how are you going to make me your husband?" he asked her as he pulled her to her feet.

"By making you fall madly in love with me, of course!" Lu Lifen suddenly shoved her face towards Su Yang and kissed him on the lips briefly.

"Kissing your Sect Master, that's quite bold of you." Su Yang said afterward.

"If you didn't want it, you could've easily dodged it," she said with a smile.

"I won't deny that," he replied with a slight chuckle.

"I will see you in seven days, Su Yang." Lu Lifen said before leaving the place a few moments later.

"What a bold girl, kissing Su Yang before so many people." Bai Lihua mumbled after witnessing the scene.

"Isn't she the youngest daughter from the Lu Family? I have done business with them before." Wang Shuren said, and she continued, "I didn't expect them to have such a relationship."

Meanwhile, Xie Xingfang's eyebrows slightly trembled, clearly shaken by the kiss between Lu Lifen and Su Yang.

'If not for my stature, then perhaps I could also act with such boldness...' she sighed inwardly.

The disciples' examination continued, and by the end of the first day, over twenty thousand participants had participated and failed the exam with more than 90% of them failing at the second stage.

Furthermore, amongst those twenty thousand people, less than 1% had actually managed to pass the exam and become a disciple of the Profound Blossom Sect.

"169 disciples on the first day, huh? It's going much better than I'd anticipated." Su Yang nodded with a satisfied expression.

"You are satisfied with so few people passing?" Lin Na was dumbfounded.

"Although 169 people may not seem like a lot of people, if you look at each of them as a genius and a potential Heavenly Spirit Realm expert, then your view might change slightly."

"169 Heavenly Spirit Realm experts?!" Lin Na's eyes widened with shock. If he puts it that way, of course, that insignificant number will instantly turn massive!

#### **Chapter 503 Profound Blossom Sect's Disciple Examination 4**

On the second day of the examination, Liu Lanzhi appeared to check up on their progress.

"How is it going, Su Yang? How many new disciples do we have now?" she asked him in an excited tone.

"Two hundred and ten," he calmly responded.

"Eh...?" Liu Lanzhi looked at him with a blank expression for the next few moments.

"210 new disciples... only?" Liu Lanzhi looked at thousands of people gathered there. She cannot fathom how they only managed to receive 210 disciples when there were tens of thousands of participants there.

"That's right. And we will only accept 1,000 disciples maximum for now," he then added.

"But why so little? Wouldn't it be better for us to accept as many disciples as possible to increase our numbers?" she asked him with a puzzled face, as the more disciples a Sect has, the better their reputation.

"I know what you are thinking, but we do not need to fill our Sect with trash just to boost our reputation, as that would only damage the Sect as time passes. What we need right now is neither reputation nor numbers but a solid foundation that will last even for thousands of years. And in order to achieve that, we cannot allow just anyone to join us. However, once our foundation is solid enough, we can start to accept more disciples regardless of their talents."

"I-I see..." Liu Lanzhi looked at him with a surprised expression, and she asked, "You seem very experienced in these things, almost like you have done this before. Did you have a Sect of your own previously? That would explain your expertise."

"I wouldn't call it a Sect, but it's something like that," he said with a mysterious tone.

Liu Lanzhi then proceeded to watch the examination for the next few hours, as she was curious about his methods.

"What's that red pill?" she asked him after seeing its mysterious effects.

Because Su Yang did not brief her on the exams, she was completely oblivious to everything that was happening.

"Demon Heart Pill. It will find the person's worst fears or traumas they had experienced before and recreate them inside their head while making it many times more horrifying, almost like a realistic dream. In order to pass this trial, one must have a strong enough Dao Heart to overcome their worst fears, or the Demon Heart Pill will influence their mind and heart and dominate it."

"What about the third trial? I have been watching for a while now, but I cannot understand what the trial is about." Liu Lanzhi then asked.

"To put it simply, it's to test their talent in cultivation. The water in that bowl is also known as Heaven Consuming Water, and it has the ability to absorb any Profound Qi that it comes into contact with. Where I am from, it's commonly used to test a person's Profound Qi absorption rate. If the Heaven Consuming Water cannot fully absorb the blood containing Profound Qi that is mixed in it, then it means that the individual with that blood has a naturally high Profound Qi absorption rate, making them excellent Cultivators."

"Of course, there are many different grades for the Heaven Consuming Water, and the one I am using right now is the lowest grade."

"Such a profound substance... just where did you find something like this?" Liu Lanzhi asked him afterward.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "You can't find something like this here even if you searched the whole world, so I created it by myself."

"I am not even going to ask you how you made it..." Liu Lanzhi sighed.

"It's quite simple, actually. You just need some regular water and a few ingredients. The most important part is the technique. If you want to use the Heaven Consuming Water in the future, I can give you the recipe later. It's nothing of value, anyway."

"R-Really? Then I won't be humble!" She quickly accepted his generosity.

"By the way, what's the meaning behind the sparring?" she asked him sometime later. "Are you hoping that someone would actually defeat our disciples?"

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "I am not hoping for anything. The only purpose the sparring serves is so I can analyze their abilities and give them cultivation techniques that best benefit their strength and weaknesses."

"What? Is that even possible? To pick the perfect technique for a disciple... that would usually require many months, even years of close observation. And you are telling me that you can do the same just by watching them fight for a few minutes?" Liu Lanzhi has never heard or seen anyone doing so much for new disciples before. Su Yang is surely the first to be so thorough and serious.

"Of course. Who do you think I am? If I cannot even do something so basic, I am not worthy to be called an Immortal," he said with a prideful smile.

By the third day of the exam, the Profound Blossom Sect had accepted 510 new disciples, but as each day passed, fewer people managed to pass the exam.

"Hmmm? That participant over there..." Liu Lanzhi suddenly pointed at one of the participants currently at the second exam and spoke, "I recognize him! He used to be an Inner Court disciple at the Sect before the incident!"

"Oh? Really?" Su Yang raised an eyebrow.

"I'm certain! Although I may not recognize every disciple, I have memorized the faces of most Inner Court disciples!"

"Then what are you thinking?" he asked her, his gaze filled with interest.

"As petty as I may sound right now, I had sworn to myself that I would not let those who abandoned the Sect on that day to step foot inside the Sect ever again! However, you are the one in charge of the exams right now, so I will let you have the final decision!" she responded with a deep frown.

Even a blind man that cannot see the unpleasant expression on her face right now can easily recognize her loathing for those who abandoned the Sect just by her tone alone.

"Very well. But let's see whether he can make it past the third exam first," said Su Yang.

#### **Chapter 504 Profound Blossom Sect's Disciple Examination 5**

"Hm? You are..."

When the young man who used to be an Inner Court disciple for the Profound Blossom Sect stepped onto the second stage, Sun Jingjing narrowed her eyes on him, almost as though she recognized him.

"Aren't you Jin Yubo? What the hell are you doing here?" Sun Jingjing said to him, who quickly began panicking.

"S-Senior apprentice-sister Sun... I'm flattered that you would remember someone as insignificant as me..." he said to her with an awkward expression.

"Don't call me senior apprentice-sister, as we are no longer fellow disciples. And if someone had annoyed you for days on end, begging you to be their partner, of course, you would remember someone like that." Sun Jingjing spoke with a frown on her face, clearly displeased by his presence.

"Anyway, how dare you partake in this exam and try to become a disciple again after abandoning us on that day? Do you have no shame? I should just fail you here without even letting you have a chance."

"P-Please don't be like that, senior... Senior Sun! I realized my mistake, and I deeply regret leaving the Sect on that day, so I am here to make it up to the Sect! Even if I am used like a slave afterward, I wouldn't dare to complain!" Jin Yubo said to her with a desperate face.

However, Sun Jingjing didn't even bat an eye at his performance and spoke in a cold voice, "Do you really think I have no idea what kind of person you are, Jin Yubo? If my grandfather was not a Sect Elder and the head of the Disciplinary Squad, I'm sure that you would've forced yourself on me like you did to plenty of other disciples."

"And I am also confident that your words just now are nothing but empty excuses! The only reason you decided to return is because of our new reputation."

"T-This... I..." Jin Yubo gritted his teeth. Every single word that came out of Sun Jingjing's mouth was right on the nail.

Because the Profound Blossom Sect is now one of the most popular and influential Sect in the Eastern Continent, most of if not all of the disciples that had abandoned them are no doubt regretting their decision to leave the Sect every day now.

In fact, Jin Yubo was not the only deserter there, as there were plenty of others within the crowd. Though, none of them had the guts to actually take the exam and was only watching it from afar. Perhaps they were all waiting for someone — a fellow disciple who left the Sect on that day — to appear and partake in the exam to decide whether they should do the same or not.

If Jin Yubo were to pass the exam and be allowed to become a disciple for the Profound Blossom Sect again, then they would also take the same chance.

"I have multiple reasons to turn you away now, and I'm sure that the Sect Masters would not blame me for it, but I shall let you take the exam. After all, I am pretty confident that someone as rotten as you would not be able to resist the Demon Heart Pill." Sun Jingjing suddenly said to him.

"T-Thank you, Senior Sun!" Jin Yubo bowed to her before taking a seat on the stage.

Meanwhile, the other 29 participants that had been watching the situation were silently laughing at Jin Yubo's misfortune.



"I will now begin the exam." Sun Jingjing said to them before breaking the Demon Heart Pill and scattering the red mist.

The red mist quickly filled the stage and engulfed the vision of everyone there.

A few seconds later, the stage was filled with terrified screaming, almost as though there was a slaughter taking place.

Meanwhile, Sun Jingjing watched as Jin Yubo rolled around the ground while pulling on his own hair.

"Because the Profound Blossom Sect has grown significantly since you abandoned us, I am sure that your heart is filled with regret, making this exam much harder for you." Sun Jingjing shook her head at him. "As for your rotten heart... it'll be a miracle if you can pass this exam."

Fifteen seconds into the exam, blood began flowing from Jin Yubo's nose.

"Oh?" Sun Jingjing raised an eyebrow upon seeing this, as Jin Yubo has become the first person to be inflicted with real damage by the Heart Demon Pill.

Indeed, out of the thousands of people that have taken the second exam, none of them have bled from it.

However, since this is her first time seeing this, she wasn't sure if she should leave him alone or move him out of the stage before it damages him even further.

"Ahhhhhh!"

Twenty seconds into the exam, blood started flowing from Jin Yubo's eyes and ears too.

Right as Sun Jingjing turned around to ask for advice, a shadowy figure appeared beside her and kicked Jin Yubo out of the stage.

When Sun Jingjing saw that it was Su Yang who had appeared, she stared at him with wide eyes.

A few moments later, once Jin Yubo calmed down slightly, Su Yang spoke, "Although I applaud you for resisting the Demon Heart Pill to such an extent, even risking your life, you would've died in about three more seconds if I didn't remove you from the stage."

"D-D-Does this mean... that I have... failed...?" Jin Yubo asked him.

"What do you think? Even if you could have managed to remain on the stage for 30 seconds, we won't accept dead people as disciples."

He then turned to look at the crowd and spoke, "I know that there are some of you within the crowd that used to be Profound Blossom Sect disciples and wonder if you have a chance to return."

"Sect Master Liu Lanzhi will not forgive you for abandoning the Sect, but I will give you a second chance. However, things won't be as simple because you have already abandoned the Sect once before. Therefore, if you wish to return, you must resist the Demon Heart Pill for 90 seconds instead of 30."

### **Chapter 505 Profound Blossom Sect's Disciple Examination 6**

"90 seconds?! That's impossible!"

When the people there heard Su Yang's new requirement for those who used to be Profound Blossom Sect disciples and wish to return, they felt pity for these ex-disciples.

Resisting the Demon Heart Pill for 30 seconds was already difficult enough, but they now have to endure it for three times longer than the other participants.

In these peoples' eyes, Su Yang purposefully made it impossible because he also didn't want these ex-disciples to return to the Sect. After all, Jin Yubo almost died before he could even last 30 seconds.

However, regardless of how slim their chances seemed, the ex-disciples were relieved to know that they would be given a second chance to become a Profound Blossom Sect disciple.

"90 seconds? That's quite cruel." Sun Jingjing chuckled beside him.

"Hm? You also think I am bullying them with an impossible task?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"Eh? You really think that some of them could possibly last 90 seconds?" she asked with a surprised face.

"If they really acknowledge their mistakes and actually want to return to the Profound Blossom Sect from the bottom of their heart, there's no reason why they cannot endure 90 seconds. Although it's definitely not something easily achievable even for those with a strong Dao Heart, it wouldn't be fair for those who risked their lives to remain in the Sect if we let them return so easily, right?"

News of the Profound Blossom Sect giving their ex-disciples a second chance quickly spread and reached the ears of those who abandoned the Sect on that day, causing many ex-disciples to appear for the exam the very next day.

Hell, even those that already belonged to another Sect decided to show up and take their chances.

On the fifth day of the exam, Su Liqing noticed a group of beauties within the crowd, and her eyes widened with surprise.

This group of beauties once worked at the Medicine Hall with her, and they even called her Master.

And since not many people appear on the third exam, Su Liqing left the stage briefly to approach Su Yang and said, "Su Yang... my disciples... they are also here..."

"Hm? Your disciples... so those girls?" Su Yang naturally remembered the cheerful disciples from the Medicine Hall that always welcomed his visits with bright smiles.

"This may sound very selfish, but I..."

Before she could even finish her sentence, Su Yang spoke with a smile, "Do whatever you want."

"Are you sure...?" she looked at him and then Liu Lanzhi with a worried expression.

"If Su Yang already gave you the permission, there's no need to question any further." Liu Lanzhi suddenly spoke, "While their decisions on that day had greatly disappointed me, it's not as though I truly hate the disciples. Furthermore, since they are your disciples, Elder Lan, I'm sure they are not bad disciples, so I am willing to forgive them."

"T-Thank you, Sect Master!" Su Liqing bowed to her before approaching the group of beauties in the crowd.

When the crowd noticed Su Liqing approaching them, they were greatly puzzled.

However, the people there didn't dare to block her path and created an empty path for her to walk.

"M-Master..."

When Su Liqing stood before her ex-disciples, they all looked at her with ashamed expressions on their faces and was unsure of what to say to her, almost like a bunch of children aware of their mistakes and before a scolding.

"Well? What do you have to say for yourselves? At least give me some excuses." Su Liqing asked them with a calm expression.

"W-We have no excuses to make, Master... We were afraid of the Million Snakes Sect, and everyone else was leaving, so we ran away like cowards."

Su Liqing released a low sigh and spoke, "You girls were not the only ones afraid since I was also trembling, so I understand your feelings. However, you also pledged to protect the Sect even at the cost of your lives when you became disciples for the first time."

"..."

The girls remained silent, as they didn't want to make the situation even worse.

"Do you girls want to return to the Sect?" Su Liqing suddenly asked them.

The girls nodded with a dazed look.

"Do you think you can endure the Demon Heart Pill for 90 seconds?" she asked them.

"W-We won't know until we try it. Even if the chances are slim, we have to try."

Su Liqing sighed and said, "Although you may not realize it, I owe you girls a great deal for volunteering to work at the Medicine Hall when nobody else wanted to work there, and I never got the chance to thank all of you."

"I have already got permission from the Sect Masters to allow you girls to return to the Sect, so there's no need for you to take the exam."

"W-What?!"

The girls looked at her with shocked expressions, seemingly in disbelief.

"Once the Sect becomes active again, we will need people working in the Medicine Hall, and I will need a few disciples to help me. And it's not as though you are completely off the hook. I will definitely work all of you to the bones as punishment," said Su Liqing.

"T-Thank you, Master! We will not forget this debt for the rest of our lives!"

The girls began crying there and then.

"I am not the one you should be thanking. If not for the Sect Masters' permission, even I cannot help you. Come with me to greet the Sect Masters."

The girls nodded and followed Su Liqing while the people around them watched with envious gazes, especially the other ex-disciples.

Once they stood before Su Yang and Liu Lanzhi, the girls kowtowed on the ground and spoke in a loud and clear voice, "Thank you, Sect Masters, for your leniency towards these unfaithful disciples! We will never abandon the Sect ever again, and we will protect the Sect even at the cost of our lives!"

### **Chapter 506 Unknown Genius**

Seeing the girls kowtowing before him, Su Yang spoke with a smile, "Honestly, I don't really blame anyone for running away. After all, the Profound Blossom Sect was not exactly a reliable Sect before, if I am being totally honest."

"W-Wha—?!" Liu Lanzhi looked at him with wide eyes, clearly speechless by his words that should not be said by any Sect Master.

"What? I am merely speaking the truth. The Profound Blossom Sect lacks an appropriate defense mechanism and is no different than a turtle without its shell during an attack. If I was an ordinary disciple, I would've also ran for my life."

Su Yang shrugged, and he continued in a calm tone, mercilessly mocking the Profound Blossom Sect without a care in the world, "Even an average Sect would have at least a defensive formation protecting the Sect, and we don't have any of that here."

"D-Defensive formations?! Do you have any idea how much resource is required to cover an entire Sect with any formation, much less a defensive one? Even most Elite Sects do not have such luxury!" Liu Lanzhi said.

Because formation techniques are extremely rare in this world, even surpassing Alchemy in terms of complexity and difficulty, very few people in this world have the opportunity to even learn it.

And even if the top formation experts in this world gathered, it would require decades of effort to create one that could cover an entire Sect.

The Divine Sword Sect, for example, had spent hundreds of millions of Spirit Stones over the course of 100 years to surround their Sect with a defensive formation.

"Ah? Formations are that rare in this world?" Su Yang shook his head with disappointment. "Guess I have to make one myself."

"W-Wait a moment..." Liu Lanzhi stared at him with wide eyes and spoke, "Y-You know how to create formations, too?"

Su Yang looked at her with a face that said, "Obviously!"

"Although I said that I will be making one, I won't be the one to actually create the formation. I am only at the Heavenly Spirit Realm, so even if I can create a formation, it won't be very powerful."

"Then what are you going to do?"

"Ask someone even more powerful than me to create it, of course."

Liu Lanzhi looked at him with an even more puzzled face and asked, "Someone even more powerful than you? Besides Lord Xie and a few individuals at the Heavenly Spirit Realm, who could possibly be stronger than you now?"

Su Yang smiled and said, "There are two individuals currently in this Sect that's much stronger than me. One of them can even turn me into dust by merely sneezing. Don't worry, I will introduce them to you later."

"S-S-Such powerful entities are currently within the Sect?! Why didn't you tell me sooner!" Liu Lanzhi began panicking, as it is considered incredibly offensive and rude to not greet such powerful experts when they are visiting any Sect.

"Your reaction is exactly the reason why I have been hiding their existence. However, you have already met both of them before."

"Huh? I have met them before...?"

A face suddenly appeared in her head. It was a young girl with otherworldly beauty.

'Could it be that little girl who killed the experts from the Million Snakes Sect at that time?' Liu Lanzhi pondered with a serious expression.

After the Medicine Hall disciples were accepted into the Sect again, Su Liqing told them to return to the Medicine Hall for the time being, and they disappeared from the scene shortly later.

On the sixth day of the examination, a total of 817 people have been accepted into the Profound Blossom Sect.

And on the final day of the examination, an uproar occurred when a very beautiful but mysterious little girl partook in the examination and quickly attracted the attention of everyone there.

"12 years old... fifth level Earth Spirit Realm?!?!?" Fang Zhelan's jaw dropped to the floor when she saw the results, and the spectators exploded into an uproar.

"What?! A 12-year-old fifth level Earth Spirit Realm expert?! Just what is her background?!"

"I know all of the renowned and powerful families within the Eastern Continent, but I don't recognize this little girl!"

"How can such a talented individual be a nobody?! Somebody here must know her!"

"There must have been a mistake with the results!"

However, even many moments later, not a single soul from the thousands of people there knew this young lady's identity.

"Nobody here knows the identity of this young girl with such shocking talent? This is truly unexpected." Divine Sword Master said with his eyes wide open.

"Reaching the fifth level Earth Spirit Realm at the age of 12... even my talents pale in comparison to this girl..." Xie Xingfang mumbled with a dazed face.

"Um... I'm sorry, but can you redo the examination again just in case there's been an error?" Fang Zhelan asked the little girl a few moments later.

The little girl nodded with a nonchalant expression and touched the totems again.

A few seconds later, the results came back without the slightest change.

"12 years old... fifth level Earth Spirit Realm..." Fang Zhelan stared at the totems with a dazed face.

"Did I pass this time?" The little girl asked her a moment later, and Fang Zhelan quickly nodded.

When the little girl advanced to the second exam, Sun Jingjing couldn't help but ask her, "Little girl, where are you from? To reach that level of cultivation at your young age, you must have a very powerful Master teaching you already. I cannot imagine why someone like you would join any Sect."

The little girl with sharp facial features and a nonchalant expression looked at Sun Jingjing with emotionless eyes and spoke in a calm voice, "I don't have a Master."

"Eh? How is that possible?" It was not just Sun Jingjing who doubted the little girl's words, as everyone there was staring at her with doubtful eyes.

If someone as young as this little girl could reach the fifth level Earth Spirit Realm without a Master, what does that say about half of the Cultivators in this world that couldn't even reach the Profound Spirit Realm without joining a Sect? Could they even be considered real Cultivators anymore?

"Su Yang... this little girl..." Liu Lanzhi turned to look at him, who was silently staring at the little girl with a pondering expression.

## **Chapter 507 Monstrous Talen**

"Y-You don't have a Master? Then how did you reach the fifth level Earth Spirit Realm at your age? That's impossible no matter how I think about it." Sun Jingjing expressed her doubts.

Unless she was someone like Su Yang, who has memories of his previous life as an Immortal, it was simply impossible for a 12-year-old to reach the fifth level Earth Spirit Realm no matter what kind of fortunate event she may have encountered.

Furthermore, this little girl was wearing ordinary — even slightly ragged clothes, so the possibility of her being in some kind of wealthy family was low — unless she purposely wears shabby clothes to deceive others as a hobby.

"I don't understand. Why is it impossible?" The little girl asked her while remaining calm.

"T-Then if you don't mind me asking, how did you reach that cultivation level?" Sun Jingjing asked her with a perplexed face, as it was simply too hard to believe that the little girl had managed to reach that level without any help.

"How... you ask?" The little girl tilted her head with a puzzled face, seemingly confused by Sun Jingjing's question. "I absorbed the energy around me normally."

"T-That's..." Sun Jingjing was speechless.

"Jingjing, there's no need to question her. It doesn't matter to us how she attained her strength, but whether she will pass the exams or not." Su Yang suddenly said to her.

"Eh? You still want her to take the exam? Even though she's a 12-year-old Earth Spirit Realm expert?" Sun Jingjing looked at him with a dumbfounded expression. Any normal individual would waste no time and immediately accept such a monstrous genius into their Sect.

"Even if she's the most talented individual in this world, if she doesn't have the right Dao Heart, she will only go so far in the Cultivation Path," he responded calmly.

Furthermore, while this little girl appears to have talents that are out of this world to these people, in Su Yang's eyes, she was only above average.

Sun Jingjing nodded, "R-Right. I'm sorry. It surprised me enough to lose focus..."

A few moments later, Sun Jingjing destroyed the Demon Heart Pill, scattering red mist everywhere.

The little girl sat in the lotus position and proceeded to resist the Demon Heart Pill.

Five seconds... ten seconds... fifteen seconds... twenty seconds... twenty-five seconds...

The little girl remained unfazed even when under the effects of the Demon Heart Pill, almost as though it had no effect on her.

Even when 30 seconds had passed, the little girl remained sitting there calmly, completely unaware that she'd already passed the exam.

And because the little girl showed no signs of struggle, Sun Jingjing allowed the little girl to continue taking the exam even past 30 seconds. Of course, she was also curious to see whether the little girl's talent was real or not.

Forty seconds... fifty seconds... an entire minute had passed since the little girl breathed the Demon Heart Pill, yet she continued to sit there calmly.

Only when five whole minutes had passed did the little girl finally open her eyes.

"Did I pass?" she asked Sun Jingjing with an uninterested face.

Sun Jingjing nodded with a dazed face.

"I see." The little girl then stood up and casually walked to the third stage.

"What a freaking monster! She managed to resist the Demon Heart Pill for 5 minutes! And it even looked like she had the ability to stay there for much longer!" The crowd cheered for the little girl who has dominated the examination thus far.

On the third stage, the little girl squeezed a drop of her blood through the hole she poked in her fingers into the Heaven Consuming Water.

The blood caused a beautiful ripple on the surface of the water before sinking deep into the bowl.

A few seconds later, the Heaven Consuming Water turned pale red. However, it did not stop there and continued to deepen in color.

After about ten seconds, the Heaven Consuming Water had turned completely crimson, almost like it'd turned into real blood.

However, the blood water did not stop there, and it continued to change to another color.

"G-Gold?! How did the water change from red to gold?!" Su Liqing was baffled by the results, and she turned to look at Su Yang, who was silently standing there with a calm expression.

"It's not red... did I fail?" The little girl looked at Su Liqing, who quickly shook her head.

"N-No... I don't think you failed..."

"She's right. You did not fail." Su Yang suddenly appeared beside them and said.

The little girl turned to look at Su Yang with a slightly dazed face.

A moment later, when she snapped out of her daze, the little girl raised her fists towards Su Yang, almost like she was prepared to fight him.

Su Yang smiled at her actions and said, "There's no need for us to spar. You have passed the exam."

"Okay..." The little girl nodded.

"What's your name?" he then asked her.

"Yan... Yan Yan," she replied.

"Welcome to the Profound Blossom Sect, Yan Yan." Su Yang handed her a disciple identification slip and continued, "You can come back once you have settled everything back at home."

However, Yan Yan shook her head and said in a calm voice, "My parents are no longer in this world, and I have no home to return to."

"Is that so... then you can start your life in the Sect today." Su Yang nodded.

"Are you not going to question me about my background?" Yan Yan asked him with an attentive gaze.

Hearing her words, he spoke with a smile, "If you want to tell me about it, I will listen to you, but I am not a busybody, so I won't pry into your life without a good reason. Furthermore, now that you are a disciple of the Profound Blossom Sect, as your Sect Master, I am only interested in seeing your growth and nothing else."

### **Chapter 508 Heaven's Favorite**

After Yan Yan was accepted into the Profound Blossom Sect as a disciple, she did not leave the place and remained standing beside Su Yang.

Of course, he did not have a problem with this and allowed her to silently stand there.

However, Liu Lanzhi, who was also there, couldn't help but glance at Yan Yan every so often with the corner of her eyes, clearly showing great interest in her identity.



Yan Yan noticed Liu Lanzhi's stares and turned to look at her and said, "What is it?"

Seeing Yan Yan's emotionless expression, Liu Lanzhi couldn't help but swallow nervously despite the differences in their age.

"I was just wondering why you decided on joining the Profound Blossom Sect when there are other renowned and even more established than us out there."

"..."

Yan Yan remained silent for a moment before speaking in a calm voice, "The energy in the world told me to come here."

"Huh? Energy?" Liu Lanzhi raised her eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

Yan Yan nodded and continued, "After my parents' death, the voices around me guided me to this place."

Hearing such gibberish, Liu Lanzhi looked at Yan Yan as though she was crazy.

Su Yang, however, chuckled after hearing her words and spoke, "By energy, she means Profound Qi."

"W-Wait a second... Are you implying that Profound Qi can communicate with humans, and she has the ability to understand it?" Liu Lanzhi now looked at Su Yang as though he was crazy.

"There's no need for implications, as it's merely the truth. Although very, very rare — about one in a few trillion — there are people beloved by the Profound Qi in this world at birth, allowing them to communicate with Profound Qi. We have a term for people like this — Heaven's Favorite."

"Unbelievable... how does that even work? What is it like to communicate with Profound Qi, the source of all power in this world?"

Su Yang shrugged at her words and said, "I wouldn't know, since I was never born with such an ability. Though, I used to know someone with the same ability, and she explained it as something similar to speaking with spirits."

"Speaking with spirits... like ghosts?"

"Something like that, I guess."

Liu Lanzhi looked at Yan Yan with a pitying expression. If she has been speaking with ghosts for her entire life, it would explain why her emotions are out of place. After all, anyone would go crazy if they hear voices when there's nobody actually there.

"However, her ability is not limited to just speaking with Profound Qi. Because she's beloved by it, one of the main sources of power for Cultivators, her Cultivation also greatly benefits. Not only does she absorb them much faster than others but she can also convert it to her own strength much easier than normal people. If you compare her to your average Cultivator, she's at least a dozen times faster when it comes to Cultivation, which explains her abnormally high Cultivation base at her young age."

Yan Yan looked at Su Yang with wide eyes filled with surprise. This is the first time in her life meeting someone who not only believes in her 'nonsense' but also fully understands her life. It was almost like she was fated to be with him.

"I understand why the voices brought me to this place now..." Yan Yan mumbled with a trembling voice.

"My parents never believed me, and they even thought there was something wrong with me, like I was possessed by something."

"Well, I don't really blame them for not understanding, since this world is highly uneducated overall..." Su Yang shook his head.

"Su Yang... how fast do you think she'll grow with this unique talent of hers?" Liu Lanzhi suddenly asked him.

"Well... if I personally trained her, she should reach the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm within 2 years."

"Peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm in two years?! She'll only be 14 years old by then! That means she's even more talented than you, Su Yang!" she looked at Yan Yan with wide eyes and a loose jaw.

"Huh?" Su Yang looked at her with a weird expression, and he said, "You know... I began to Cultivate seriously only last year. In other words, it took me 1 year to reach my current level from the Elementary Spirit Realm."

"Oh? What's this? Are you actually comparing yourself to her? Is this jealousy?" Liu Lanzhi spoke in a teasing voice.

Su Yang smiled and said, "It's not fair to compare us in the first place. Though, I must say that I am indeed slightly envious. After all, anyone beloved by the world's Profound Qi is guaranteed to live a successful Cultivation life, and they all become experts that stand at the apex of this world in the future without fail."

"However, while she's very fortunate to be born with such talent, it's also very, very unfortunate at the same time..." Su Yang looked at Yan Yan while sighing.

"Huh? What do you mean by that? How could that possibly be unfortunate? Are you going to say something along the lines of 'in exchange for having such heaven-defying talents, she'll live a short life'?"

He shook his head and spoke, "She won't die early, but it's truly unfortunate that she was born in this world, where the overall quality of its Profound Qi is embarrassingly low."

"Even if she has heaven-defying talents, she will be limited by this world's Profound Qi and stop growing after reaching the Sovereign Spirit Realm no matter how much she cultivates."

"I can bring her to my hometown, the Divine Heavens, but it's not guaranteed that she will have the same talents over there, as she's only beloved by the Profound Qi in this world and not that world. And before you ask, yes, Profound Qi is similar to humans and animals by being unique in our own ways. Every world has its own unique Profound Qi, so even if she's beloved by the Profound Qi here, it might not be the case over there, where she might be reduced to being an ordinary girl."

'If she was born over there instead, she could've become an incredibly formidable Cultivator that stands at the peak of the world. But alas, she was born in this dump, wasting her talents.' Su Yang sighed inwardly as he looked at the beautiful little girl beside him, feeling as though Heaven was playing with her.

### **Chapter 509 Summoned Beas**

Towards the end of the seventh day, the final day for the examination, the Profound Blossom Sect has accepted a total of 893 new disciples.

There is only less than six hours left before the exam ends, but there are still 100 slots to be filled.

"In six hours, the disciples' examination will come to an end, but seeing how we are very close to accepting our limit, if we do not have 1,000 disciples within six hours, we shall continue the examination until we have 1,000 new disciples. Of course, we will only extend it for another 24 hours, so if we do not have 1,000 disciples by then, we will close the examinations until next year."

"On the other hand, once we have accepted our 1,000th disciple, we will immediately close the examinations. If you did not get a chance to participate in this year's examination but wish to return next year, we will give you a token so that you can skip to the front of the line and be the first to partake next year's examination."

When the participants there heard this announcement, they quickly grew more anxious, especially when the number of available spots began disappearing one by one.

Six hours later, because the Profound Blossom Sect did not meet their quota of 1,000 disciples and still had 36 open slots, they decided to extend the examination for another 24 hours.

Four hours after the time extension, the number of available slots has decreased to 17.

After another two hours, the number of available slots has decreased to 7.

"Why did you extend the time, Su Yang? I didn't think you would be so generous." Liu Lanzhi asked him.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Because I'm in a good mood."

"Is it because of her?" Liu Lanzhi's eyes pointed at Yan Yan, who has been standing there this entire time like a doll.

"I guess you can say that. This will be my first time teaching someone beloved by the Heavens, after all. I'm interested to see how much and how fast she'll grow."

After another hour had passed, there were only 3 more available slots left.

"Just three more disciples, huh?" Liu Lanzhi nodded with satisfaction.

Although accepting only 1,000 disciples is a lot less than what she'd expected from their current status and reputation, it's still much better than previously, where they would only receive a few dozens of disciples every year even during the Sect's prime days.

"Oh, right. Su Yang, I have a question—"

Just as Liu Lanzhi opened her mouth, the ground began trembling.

"What? An earthquake?"

The people there did not care much at the beginning, expecting the trembling to go away after a few seconds.

However, the ground continued to shake even after an entire minute had passed, growing stronger with every passing moment.

"W-What is going on?! This is not an ordinary earthquake!"

The people there began growing increasingly worried and nervous.

"Su Yang, what is happening? What's causing this earthquake?" Liu Lanzhi asked him.

"..."

However, Su Yang remained silent as he stared at a certain direction with a serious expression.

"???"

Liu Lanzhi also turned to look in that direction, but she couldn't see anything there no matter how much she looked.

A few more moments later, someone pointed at where Su Yang had been staring at and suddenly exclaimed in a shocked and terrified voice, "L-L-Look over there! What the heck is that?!"

The people there turned to look at where that individual was pointing, and that was when everyone there could see an enormous black snake that had appeared out of thin air many miles in the distance.

This black snake had blood-red eyes and a dreadful aura around it, and it was also emitting powerful killing intent. Furthermore, its frame was so large that it was taller than a mountain, and its head was even touching the clouds.

"Oh, my Heavens! I have never seen a Spiritual Beast that freaking huge before!"

"H-Hey! Doesn't it appear to be coming towards our direction?"

The people there began panicking when they realized the enormous snake was approaching them.

"Run! Run for your lives if you don't want to be squashed to death by that monster!"

The people there began running away from the examination area.

"Su Yang! What is that thing?!" Sun Jingjing and the other disciples quickly approached him.

Wang Shuren, Elder Zhong, Bai Lihua, and Xie Xingfang also appeared before him a few seconds later.

"Judging by the energy it's emitting... that's a summoned beast." Su Yang spoke a moment later.

"What?! A summoned beast?! So someone summoned that monster?! Who would do such a thing, and for what reason?!" Liu Lanzhi exclaimed with a shocked face.

And just as Liu Lanzhi asked that question, another voice resounded in the area. However, this voice did not belong to anybody in the examination area and sounded like it came from very far away.

"Hahahaha! How do you like this Demonic Blood Serpent, Su Yang?!"

When Elder Zhong heard this familiar-sounding voice, his eyes widened with shock, and he mumbled loudly, "Fu Kuan!"

"Fu Kuan, the Sect Leader of the Million Snakes Sect?!" Bai Lihua exclaimed upon hearing his name.

"The Million Snakes Sect?!" Liu Lanzhi's body trembled after hearing their name.

Fu Kuan's voice suddenly resounded again, "The Million Snakes Sect had planned on using this trump card to take over the arrogant Xie Family in a few years, but because of you, Su Yang, I have changed my mind and decided to not only accelerate our plans by a few years but also use it to destroy the Profound Blossom Sect at the same time!"

"What?! Have you gone mad, Sect Leader Fu?! This is treason against the Xie Family! My family will not let this slide, and they will punish you with death!" Xie Xingfang said in a furious voice.

"Hahaha! If you can stop this Demonic Blood Serpent that far surpasses the Heavenly Spirit Realm, I will gladly give you my life! But if you cannot kill it, it will surely destroy both the Xie Family and the Profound Blossom Sect and take over the Eastern Continent!" Fu Kuan roared loudly while standing on the head of the beast.

## **Chapter 510 Sacrifices**

"That summoned beast is above even the Heavenly Spirit Realm?! Could it possibly be at the same level as my grandpa, the Sovereign Spirit Realm?!" Xie Xingfang's body trembled at the thought of such a powerful monster roaming this world.

"If that's true, which is very likely since even I cannot see its cultivation base, then I'm afraid that only the Ancestor has the ability to kill that beast..." Elder Zhong spoke with a deep frown.

"What should we do, Su Yang?"

The people there looked at him, as he always seemed to have a solution for any situation no matter how bad it appeared.

"Hmmm..." Su Yang rubbed his chin with a calm expression and spoke, "That summoned beast is not only in the Sovereign Spirit Realm, but it's even at the peak of the Sovereign Spirit Realm. I'm afraid that none of you here can defeat it, and this is true even for that old man at the Sovereign Spirit Realm."

"W-What?! Then what the hell are we supposed to do? Even if we cannot defeat it, we cannot just sit around and do nothing!" Bai Lihua said.

She then pointed at him and continued to speak, "And why the hell are you so relaxed in this situation?!"

Su Yang shrugged and said, "Why would I be panicking? Although none of you can kill it, I have plenty of methods to kill it."

"Why didn't you say so in the beginning?!"

Sometime later, the Demonic Blood Serpent stopped moving a few miles away from the Profound Blossom Sect, almost like it wasn't in a hurry to destroy everything in its path.

"Su Yang, do you have any last words before I trample your entire Sect to the ground while you watch powerlessly?!" Fu Kuan laughed out loud.

A few moments later, Su Yang used his spiritual energy to lift himself into the air and hovered before the Demonic Blood Serpent.

"Let me come with you, Su Yang!" Xie Xingfang also followed him into the air.

"Y-Your Highness!"

Since he was obligated to protect Xie Xingfang, Elder Zhong also followed them.

"..."

Bai Lihua sighed. Even if this has nothing to do with the Heavenly Swan Sect, she was also obligated to protect the Xie Family as an Elite Sect's Leader.

As for the others, since they were not at the Heavenly Spirit Realm, they did not have the ability to soar in the sky, forcing them to watch from the ground.

"Good luck, Su Yang!"

"Stay safe, everyone!"

The others cheered for them.

"Even if all four of you attack at once, you will not be able to defeat my summoned beast!" Fu Kuan stood before them with an arrogant expression.

"..."

Su Yang stared at the Demonic Blood Serpent for a good moment before speaking with a grim expression, "I cannot imagine the Million Snakes Sect having enough resources to summon a beast of this level. How many people did you sacrifice to summon it? 1,000 people? 10,000 people?"

"Oh? So you knew?" A wide and terrifying smile appeared on Fu Kuan's face as he spoke, "It's not much, really. I only had to sacrifice about 90% of the Sect's disciples in order to summon it."

"W-What?! You sacrificed your own disciples — and 90% of the Sect?! Just to get revenge on the Profound Blossom Sect?! You are insane!" Xie Xingfang covered her mouth with her trembling hands in shock.

The Million Snakes Sect has about 40,000 disciples, and if Fu Kuan had sacrificed 90% of his disciples, that would be around 36,000 lives sacrificed.

"Fu Kuan... you madman..." Even Elder Zhong couldn't help but feel his stomach spin after learning that 36,000 lives had been sacrificed to summon this Demonic Blood Serpent.

"I doubt those disciples had willingly sacrificed themselves. What did you do to them?" Bai Lihua asked him with a cold gaze.

"Nothing much, really. I just gathered them in one place before putting them to sleep with drugs. They all died peacefully and unknowingly. As for the remaining 10% of the disciples, I will use their lives to replenish the Demonic Blood Serpent's strength before I destroy the Xie Family after this."

"The Heavens will not forgive you for this! Heavenly Retribution will come sooner or later to punish you!" Xie Xingfang exclaimed with tears in her eyes, as she cannot even begin to imagine the bloody scene at the Million Snakes Sect right now.

Su Yang released a long sigh and spoke in a slow but clear voice, "If I knew this would've happened, I should've just destroyed the Million Snakes Sect on the same day of that incident. At least those disciples would not have died in vain."

"But you know, Fu Kuan... what you are doing right now is quite pointless."

"Pointless, you say? Is that all you have to say now that I have cornered you, Su Yang? How pathetic of you!" Fu Kuan looked at him with a frown.

Su Yang shook his head and said, "You have sacrificed thousands of lives — your own disciples at that — destroying your own Sect in the process... all for what? Just to kill me?"

"You must be pretty confident that you would be able to kill me like this, but where is your confidence coming from, I wonder?"

"Hah? Have you gone stupid from fright? You may be a genius, but you are still human! You may have some ability, but your power is limited! You are only at the Heavenly Spirit Realm, but my Demonic Blood Serpent is at the peak of the Sovereign Spirit Realm! Not even an Immortal can ignore such a large disparity in Cultivation!"

Su Yang merely shrugged his shoulders and spoke, "I will only be wasting my breath if I tried to explain it to you, so I will show you just how pointless your actions and sacrifices are by killing that beast you are so confident could kill me."

The next moment, Su Yang retrieved a beautiful sword with a semi-transparent blade that emitted a domineering aura from his storage ring, causing the atmosphere to instantly change, almost as though a divine presence had appeared.

### **Chapter 511 Divine Moonstone Blade**

When the semi-transparent sword appeared in this world, it was as though a treasure was being born in that area, causing all of the Profound Qi in a 1,000 mile radius to gather around Su Yang.

Once the Profound Qi got near Su Yang, the sword trembled, flickering with a profound light, before absorbing all of the Profound Qi nearly instantaneously.

"W-What kind of treasure is that?!"

Not just Fu Kuan, but the rest of the people there were all shocked speechless by the appearance of this mythical treasure.

'Not even the low quality Divine-grade Spiritual Treasure that is my family's heirloom could emit such a powerful aura!' Xie Xingfang swallowed nervously.

Above Heaven-grade Spiritual Treasures is the Divine-grade, and in the entire Eastern Continent, there exists only one of this treasure, which belongs to the Xie Family. However, the beautiful sword in Su Yang's hands emitted an aura that far surpasses the Divine-grade Spiritual Treasure, which only suggests that it's above even the Divine-grade.

Meanwhile, a few miles away from their location, inside the Profound Blossom Sect, Qiuyue's eyes snapped open when she felt the unnatural flow of Profound Qi.

"This feeling is..."

She stopped her cultivation, immediately left the house, and she soared towards the Su Yang's location.

When she was close enough to see the summoned beast and the sword in Su Yang's hands, her eyes widened with surprise.

'The Divine Moonstone Blade?!'

Qiuyue was surprised to see her sword being used by him. The Divine Moonstone Blade is a treasure that belonged to the Sacred Moon Temple and was once used by Yuehai, her mother. But when she ran away from the Sacred Moon Temple, Qiuyue stole the sword and took it with her. This is another reason why the Sacred Moon Temple was hell-bent on capturing her, as she has one of their most precious treasures.

"Fath— Su Yang! What is going on?" Qiuyue flew right beside him and asked.

"Y-You are!?"

When the other people there saw Qiuyue, their eyes widened with shock.

"The Goddess from that time?!" Xie Xingfang's body trembled after feeling Qiuyue's otherworldly presence.

'Who the hell is that? I can feel an ominous feeling coming from her... she's a dangerous one...' Fu Kuan stared at Qiuyue with a deep frown. Because the Million Snakes Sect did not linger around after their defeat, Fu Kuan did not know of Qiuyue's existence.

"Y-You are Su Yang's Master! If it's you, who even the Ancestor lowered his head to, you should be able to defeat that monster, right?!" Elder Zhong suddenly said while pointing to the Demonic Blood Serpent.

"Master?" Qiuyue turned to look at him with a frown. "I am not his Master."

She then looked at the Demonic Blood Serpent with raised eyebrows and said, "Peak of the Sovereign Spirit Realm? Although its cultivation base appears to be high, its internal energy is not stable. That thing is as powerful as someone at the second or third level Sovereign Spirit Realm at best."

"So? Do you need me to kill this beast?" She asked Su Yang with an unfazed expression, almost as though the Demonic Blood Serpent was no different than an ordinary snake in her eyes.



"No, this is a good chance for me to test out the full extent of my abilities. Even though I am slightly cheating by using the Divine Moonstone Blade, an Ancient-grade treasure, I currently don't have any other treasure on hand that can withstand the Asura God Clan's techniques."

"Asura God Clan's technique? Don't tell me you are going to use the same technique you used to scare that little girl?" Qiuyue recalled that time in the Holy Central Continent when he made Wu Jingjing piss her pants by using some sword technique from the Asura God Clan.

Su Yang nodded.

"Can you protect those people down there?" Su Yang's eyes pointed at the disciples at the examination hall.

Qiuyue nodded and approached them, before creating a powerful defensive formation around them.

"W-What a powerful formation! And she even created it in the blink of an eye!" Liu Lanzhi was dumbfounded by Qiuyue's ability, wondering if she's the one Su Yang mentioned that would be helping him with the formation for the Profound Blossom Sect.

"What are you looking at?" Qiuyue looked at her with raised eyebrows.

"Just who are you, really? An Immortal like Su Yang?" Liu Lanzhi asked her in a low voice.

Qiuyue looked at her with narrowed eyes and spoke, "You know his background? Who are you?"

"I-I am the Profound Blossom Sect's Leader! And yes, he told me a little bit about his background before..."

"Is that so?" After staring at Liu Lanzhi for a moment, Qiuyue no longer paid attention to her and returned to watching Su Yang.

Meanwhile, Su Yang said to the other Heavenly Spirit Realm experts, "If you don't want to get caught up in the blast, I suggest you retreat to the disciples. You'll be safe there."

"Are you sure that you don't need any help, Su Yang? Even if it's dangerous, I am willing to stay behind and help you defeat that beast!" Xie Xingfang asked him with a worried face behind her veil.

No matter how talented he may appear to be, it was simply reckless to fight someone an entire realm stronger than yourself, especially when the opponent is a spiritual beast at the Sovereign Spirit Realm.

Spiritual beasts are known to be naturally stronger than human Cultivators at the same level, so if a Cultivator wanted to defeat a spiritual beast at the first level Sovereign Spirit Realm, the Cultivator would require strength at the second — or even the third level and above to fight it.

Of course, there are genius Cultivators that can fight spiritual beasts above their current level, but those people are too few and far between.

"Don't worry about me and go to where the others are. Things might get a little bit hectic here in a moment, as I might not have perfect control over this technique, and I don't want to hurt you."

After staring at him for a few more moments, Xie Xingfang nodded and made her way into the defensive formation around Qiuyue, as did the other Heavenly Spirit Realm experts.

## Chapter 512 Squirming in Fear

Once everyone besides Su Yang was inside the defensive formation, Qiuyue overlapped the formation with a few more defensive formations. A single one of these defensive formations could block a hundred Cultivators at the peak Sovereign Spirit Realm and not even receive a single crack, much less a dozen of formations all grouped together.

"Senior, do you think he can kill that Demonic Blood Serpent?" Xie Xingfang asked Qiuyue in a respectful tone.

Qiuyue looked at her and shrugged her shoulders with a serious expression, "How would I know?"

"Eh?"

Xie Xingfang and the others there looked at her with a baffled face. How could an expert like her not know the outcome? Surely she must have a lot of experience — enough to determine the results of a fight before it even began.

However, in truth, despite her cultivation base and having lived for thousands of years, Qiuyue lacked experience in combat, as she has lived a very secluded life since she was young.

Of course, she had to deal with the Sacred Moon Temple hunting her down, but she only needed to escape, which did not require much fighting.

After arriving at this world, where every Cultivator is no different than ants in her eyes, even if she needed to fight, all that was required of her to win the fight was to release some of her Cultivation and it would shock her opponents to death.

Seeing Xie Xingfang's dazed look, Qiuyue continued to speak a moment later, "If Su Yang told you to not worry about him, then there shouldn't be any reason for you to worry about him. Of course, this situation may appear to be reckless and out of his hands, but I trust in his judgement and confidence."

Hearing her words that did not have even a sliver of doubt, Xie Xingfang nodded and decided to trust in Su Yang too.

Meanwhile, in the air, Su Yang and Fu Kuan stared at each other in silence.

"Thank you for being patient." Su Yang said to Fu Kuan with a nonchalant expression on his face after Xie Xingfang and the others left his side.

Fu Kuan coldly snorted with disdain on his face, "Hmph! There's no need to rush things. As long as I have this Demonic Blood Serpent by my side, I can kill you whenever I want easily, and I want your death to be a slow and painful one!"

His gaze then went from Su Yang's face to the sword in his hands, "I should thank you beforehand for giving me such a wonderful treasure."

Su Yang raised the sword and spoke with a smile, "Even if I handed this sword to you right now, you would not be able to handle it. Did you know that Spiritual Treasures at the Empyrean-grade and above can grow their own conscience?"

"When that happens, they can choose their owners — those who can wield them and those who cannot even touch them."

"And over the last few thousand years, there has been only two individuals that have ever managed to gain the Divine Moonstone Blade's approval."

"A load of bullshit!" Fu Kuan forcefully waved his sleeves, causing the Profound Qi there to scatter.

"If you don't believe me, why don't you take this sword and see what will happen to your body afterward?" Su Yang suddenly extended the sword towards Fu Kuan with a calm expression, almost as though he was offering the sword to Fu Kuan.

"Su Yang?!" Xie Xingfang was dumbfounded by his actions. There was a high chance that Su Yang was only bluffing, but if Fu Kuan somehow managed to obtain that treasure, it would be disastrous for all of them.

However, Qiuyue spoke in a calm voice, "Su Yang's not bluffing. That treasure truly has its own consciousness. In fact, even though I am able to touch it, I have no control over it. If anyone besides Su Yang and my mother touches it, the Divine Moonstone Blade will try to kill them by pouring an insane amount of Profound Qi that they cannot handle into their body, instantly exploding their body and killing them."

Xie Xingfang's body trembled upon imagining such a scenario, where her body explodes just by touching this treasure.

"..."

Fu Kuan stared at the sword with a deep frown. Although he was pretty certain that Su Yang was only bluffing about the spiritual weapon having its own consciousness, he could sense a very subtle but dangerous feeling coming from the sword.

It was a feeling that came from his instincts — one that made every cell in his body tremble.

After a few moments had passed without any movements from Fu Kuan, Su Yang retrieved the sword and spoke, "I am a busy man, so I won't linger around any longer."

After saying those words, Su Yang gently caressed the semi-transparent blade with his fingers, causing black flame to rise from where he touched.

By the time his fingers reached the tip of the blade, the entire sword was engulfed in black flames.

However, despite having his hands directly inside this dangerous-looking black flame, Su Yang could only feel a comfortable warm feeling, almost like his hands were wrapped in a soft blanket.

Meanwhile, the Profound Qi in a 10,000-mile radius was rushing towards Su Yang's location and absorbed by the Divine Moonstone Blade, causing the black flames to appear even darker and fiercer, like flames from the deepest part of hell.

At this moment, Su Yang did not appear to be a mere Heavenly Spirit Realm expert, and he emitted an aura that was similar to the Demonic Blood Serpent — no, it even surpassed it!

When the Demonic Blood Serpent sensed the killing intent and dreadful aura coming from the black flames, it began trembling whilst making a weird noise that almost sounded like it was crying.

"Demonic Blood Serpent?!" Fu Kuan looked at it squirming around like it wanted to escape with a shocked expression. He simply couldn't believe his eyes. How could the Demonic Blood Serpent, a summoned beast at the peak of the Sovereign Spirit Realm that required over 36,000 human sacrifices to summon, tremble in fear before a mere Cultivator at the Heavenly Spirit Realm?!

### **Chapter 513 Overwhelming Prowess**

Su Yang could feel his body surging with spiritual energy and power. However, he was fully aware that the majority of this power would not last long, as it came from the strand of Celestial Qi inside his body after it gained the Divine Moonstone Blade's power, and he has at most a dozen seconds before it disappears.

Of course, having a dozen seconds is more than enough for him to kill the Demonic Blood Serpent and Fu Kuan.

Once the Divine Moonstone Blade was entirely engulfed in black flames, Su Yang's eyes flickered with a profound light, and his arms swung the sword horizontally.

"First Asura Secret: Heaven Consuming Strike!"

Whoosh!

The black flames scattered from the semi-transparent blade and an enormous arc of flames flew towards Fu Kuan and the Demonic Blood Serpent.

Fu Kuan's eyes widened with shock when he saw the enormous arc of flames that radiated a massive amount of energy speeding his way.

And in the time it takes one to blink their eyes, Fu Kuan instinctively retrieved his life-saving treasure and activated it without hesitation, veiling himself in a golden light that instantaneously transported him to a safe distance a hundred miles away from the Demonic Blood Serpent.

The instant Fu Kuan activated his life-saving treasure that was worth over 5 million spirit stones, the arc of flames arrived right before the Demonic Blood Serpent.

When the arc of flames touched the Demonic Blood Serpent even slightly, the flames expanded and engulfed the Demonic Blood Serpent almost instantly, causing it to scream in harrowing pain.

However, the arc of flames did not stop at the Demonic Blood Serpent and continued to fly into the distance — until it collided with the mountain range behind the Demonic Blood Serpent.

Whoosh!

The moment the arc of flames touched the mountain range, it turned everything it touched into dust, instantly disintegrating a dozen large mountains with ease.

After destroying a dozen mountains, the arc of flames traveled for a few more miles before disappearing into thin air.

By the time the arc of flames disappeared, the Demonic Blood Serpent was burnt until not even its ashes remained.

"I-I-Impossible...!"

Fu Kuan stared at the empty space and the cleanly destroyed mountains with his eyes popping out of its sockets and his jaw wide open, as he has never seen such a destructive technique before.

If Su Yang had used this technique inside a city or in a Sect instead of the wilderness, he would've erased an entire city or Sect instantly!

"J-Just how powerful is Su Yang?! That is not something someone at the Heavenly Spirit Realm can achieve! Even my grandfather would have trouble destroying an entire mountain by himself, much less a dozen of them, and with such ease!" Xie Xingfang exclaimed in a shocked manner after witnessing Su Yang's true abilities.

"Unbelievable... Just what kind of sword technique did he just use? It surpasses anything I have ever seen before!" Elder Zhong's body trembled at the presence of such a profound sword technique, feeling overwhelmed even by its lingering aura.

"So you survived, huh?" Su Yang looked at Fu Kuan with a calm expression, but his face and body was covered in sweat.

Using the Asura God Clan's technique just a single time has exhausted the majority of his Profound Qi, not to mention the strenuous effect from using his Celestial Qi to enhance the technique's strength.

But despite feeling like he could collapse at any moment from exhaustion, Su Yang managed to remain awake to speak with a smile on his face, "I'm actually relieved that you did not die so easily, since that would be too lenient of a punishment for a sinner like you."

"Y-Y-You..." Fu Kuan's body was frozen from fear. Even if he wanted to turn around and run away, his body refused to listen to him, causing him to stand around like a chicken waiting to be slaughtered.

"I am going to make sure that you will bear the responsibility for every single one of those 36,000 lives you have stolen and wasted."

Su Yang used the Nine Astral Steps to instantly close the distance between him and Fu Kuan.

"Screw you! Toxic Finger Strike!"

When Su Yang got close to him, Fu Kuan suddenly swung his claw-like hands that were coated in strong poison at Su Yang.

Whoosh!

The Divine Moonstone Blade in Su Yang's grasp flickered and disappeared for an instant.

And in that instant, it has severed both of Fu Kuan's arms.

After cutting off Fu Kuan's arms, Su Yang stabbed Fu Kuan's dantian with the Divine Moonstone Blade.

"Divine Sword's Absolute Seal!"

Su Yang then sealed Fu Kuan's cultivation base and his fatal injury, transforming him into an ordinary mortal and preventing more blood from leaving his body at the same time.

However, he was not finished with Fu Kuan, as Su Yang then tapped Fu Kuan on the forehead with his finger that was glowing with a mysterious black light.

"Nine Thousand Ancient Curses!"

Fu Kuan could feel a mysterious change had occurred within his body, but he could not tell exactly what had changed inside him.

And all of this had happened in the time it takes one to blink their eyes, making it impossible for Fu Kuan to react.

"W-What on earth did you just do to me, Su Yang?!" Fu Kuan roared, feeling as though his body no longer belonged to him.

Su Yang did not say anything to him and merely used his remaining strength to return to Qiuyue and the others.

"I have permanently sealed Fu Kuan's cultivation base so he is completely powerless now. He is no longer a threat even to mortals. You can do whatever you want with him, Lady Xie." Su Yang said to her.

"A-Are you sure?" Xie Xingfang mumbled in a dazed voice, clearly still in awe after witnessing his overwhelming prowess.

Su Yang nodded and said, "He has sacrificed over 36,000 lives, and they were even his own disciples. I think it would be more appropriate if I let the Xie Family handle him. Furthermore, he's nothing but an ant in my eyes. I simply couldn't care less about him."

Xie Xingfang nodded a few moments later, "I swear on my family name that the Xie Family will punish him accordingly and bring justice to those he killed even if it's only slightly!"

### **Chapter 514 Dreadful Curse**

"Oh, and you don't need to be lenient on the punishment, as he cannot kill himself no matter what you do to him." Su Yang suddenly said to her in a cold voice.

"W-Wait a moment... he cannot kill himself? What do you mean by that?" Bai Lihua asked him with her interest piqued.

"I have placed a curse on him. He cannot kill himself even if he wants to desperately die," he calmly responded.

"H-How does that work?" Elder Zhong asked, as he was also intrigued by such a profound curse.

"I cursed his soul. If he even thinks about trying to kill himself, the curse will inflict harm on his soul, making him experience excruciating pain that is worse than death until he gives up on that thought. However, that pain will not kill him no matter how painful it gets. Furthermore, it will restrict his movements until the pain stops, so he cannot force himself through the pain."

After learning how the curse worked, the people there showed horrified expressions on their faces.

"What a terrifying and cruel curse! You cannot die even if you want to!" Liu Lanzhi covered her mouth in shock.

"It may seem cruel and inhuman, but for someone as sinister as Fu Kuan, he fully deserves it." Xie Xingfang spoke in a cold voice, as she has zero sympathy for someone who could sacrifice their own disciples and kill them like insects.

"Allow me to escort Fu Kuan back to the Xie Family for you, Your Highness." Elder Zhong suddenly said.

Xie Xingfang nodded, and Elder Zhong went to fetch Fu Kuan, who was trying to run away with his remaining 2 limbs.

However, without his Cultivation, Fu Kuan only managed to run a few hundred meters before being caught by Elder Zhong.

"Where the hell do you think you are going, Fu Kuan?" Elder Zhong grabbed him by the neck and carried him back to Xie Xingfang that way.

"Get on your knees!" Elder Zhong forced Fu Kuan to his knees when they arrived at Xie Xingfang's side.

"Fuck you!" Fu Kuan growled.

"Ahhhhh!"

Fu Kuan screamed when Elder Zhong suddenly stomped on one of his legs, shattering all of the bones in that leg.

"W-W-What are you all waiting for?! Kill me already!" Fu Kuan shouted with his entire face covered in sweat.

"Don't worry, we won't kill you." Xie Xingfang stared at him with a disgusted expression behind her veil, almost like she was looking at something revolting.

"I am going to bring you back to the Xie Family and have you bear responsibility for every single life that you have stolen even if it will take 100 years."

"F-Fuck you! Like hell I am going to allow you to torture me for the rest of my life! If you are not going to kill me, then I will gladly do it myself!"

Just as Fu Kuan prepared to bite his own tongue off and commit suicide, the curse placed upon his soul by Su Yang activated, causing Fu Kuan to feel excruciating pain all over his body that would make even the toughest man in this world beg to be killed instead.

"AAAAAAAAAAAAHHH!!!"

Fu Kuan's screams were ear-piercing and sounded even worse than the sounds a pig makes when it's getting slaughtered, and those who heard such a terrifying scream felt their heart tremble in fear.

Feeling as though he was being burned alive while his body was continuously being pierced by thousands of swords, not to mention his headache that felt as though his soul was being crushed by an invisible force, Fu Kuan attempted to bite his tongue off.

However, he quickly realized that he was unable to close his mouth even a millimeter, much less bite his tongue!

'W-What's going on?! Why can't I move my body?! And what's this excruciating pain?!'

Fu Kuan cried inwardly and began to panic.

However, even as he panicked, the pain became increasingly more intensive, and within just a few seconds, Fu Kuan has lost even his ability to think under this pain.

"You should give up on even thinking about killing yourself. Su Yang had placed a curse on you, where you cannot kill yourself even if you want to." Xie Xingfang said to him after she could no longer bear to listen to his screaming anymore, as she was slowly going insane just by hearing it.

A few moments later, when Fu Kuan has lost all of his desire to commit suicide, the pain quickly subdued.

"I... I cannot kill myself...?" Fu Kuan mumbled in a low voice that was void of all emotions, almost as though he'd lost all hopes and gone insane.

He then slowly turned to look at Su Yang with a horrified expression and spoke, "Are you... are you even human?"

"That's quite rich coming from you, who sacrificed the lives of his own disciples— 36,000 of them, at that." Su Yang replied with a calm expression, clearly feeling no pity or regret for his actions.

"But you should still consider yourself lucky for getting away with just that curse. If I had to punish you myself, you would be begging to have that curse instead."

'He's considered lucky with that curse?!'

The others there were also looking at Su Yang at this moment, and they were silently telling themselves to never offend him no matter what.

"Aaaaah! I will kill you!!!" Fu Kuan suddenly launched himself at Su Yang with his last limb that was not broken or severed.

His eyes were blood red and his mouth wide open, almost like he was trying to bite Su Yang's handsome face.

Pa!

A loud and crisp noise resounded as Liu Lanzhi suddenly appeared and slapped Fu Kuan in the face, sending him flying back.

"Aiya! Although he cannot kill himself, other people can still kill him! He's no different than a mortal now! What if you had killed him with that powerful slap just now?" Su Yang exclaimed in a joking voice after witnessing the fierce slap by Liu Lanzhi.

"Hmph! I wish I could kill him with my own hands!" Liu Lanzhi coldly snorted.

**Chapter 515 The End of the Million Snakes Sec**



A few moments after getting slapped by Liu Lanzhi, Fu Kuan slowly struggled to stand up from the ground, before spitting out a dozen bloody teeth.

Although Liu Lanzhi held her strength back during the slap, because Fu Kuan was as weak as an ordinary mortal and he did not refine his physical body, that slap felt as though a bull had charged at his face.

Now with less than half of his teeth remaining, Fu Kuan looked at Liu Lanzhi and shouted, "You fucking bitch! If not for Su Yang, the Profound Blossom Sect would have disappeared months ago!"

Liu Lanzhi's eyebrows twitched upon hearing his words, but she did not express any rage and managed to remain calm.

"I won't disagree with you on that since that is the truth. Indeed, without Su Yang, the Profound Blossom Sect would not be here today, and neither I or the Sect could ever repay him fully."

Liu Lanzhi spoke from the bottom of her heart, causing Fu Kuan to tremble in anger.

He simply couldn't have imagined that he would one day fall so low just because of one Junior from a small place like the Profound Blossom Sect.

"Your Highness, please take him away. I do not want his presence dirtying the air near the Profound Blossom Sect any longer." Liu Lanzhi bowed to Xie Xingfang a moment later.

Xie Xingfang nodded at her and then turned to look at Elder Zhong.

Seeing her signaling eyes, Elder Zhong nodded before grabbing Fu Kuan by the neck again.

As Elder Zhong began dragging Fu Kuan away, Xie Xingfang turned to look at Su Yang and bowed to him, "As someone from the Xie Family, I deeply apologize for this incident. The Xie Family is responsible for keeping the Elite Sects — Million Snakes Sect — in check, but due to our lack of involvement, they have been getting too arrogant and abusive. I promise that we will increase our involvement and make sure that this doesn't ever happen again in the future."

"P-Please lift your head, Your Highness! This incident is entirely the Million Snakes Sect's fault, especially Fu Kaun, the Sect Leader! You shouldn't lower your head for scumbags like them!" Liu Lanzhi quickly spoke.

"I know, but it won't feel right for me if I didn't personally apologize, especially when I was basically useless this entire time. It makes me feel as though I am not worthy of my surname."

Xie Xingfang then continued, "Once again, I apologize for this incident. I will make sure to award the Profound Blossom Sect for dealing with Fu Kuan and keeping him from causing any more havoc. While it's truly unfortunate for those 36,000 disciples to have lost their lives because of a single person's insanity, you have saved potentially millions of lives by slaying the Demonic Blood Serpent — including my Xie Family."

"What's going to happen to the rest of the Million Snakes Sect disciples?" Liu Lanzhi asked her.

"The Million Snakes Sect will no longer exist after today, so they will have to find new homes," Xie Xingfang responded.

Nobody there was surprised to hear that the Million Snakes Sect would cease to exist after today, as the majority of their disciples have suddenly died, and their Sect Leader is also no more.

Unlike the Profound Blossom Sect that managed to survive with less than a hundred disciples, the Million Snakes Sect's disciples did not willingly leave the Sect but had been unwillingly sacrificed instead. It would be a miracle if even one of the remaining 10,000 disciples would be willing to remain in the Sect after an incident.

However, the biggest reason why the Million Snakes Sect would not survive is simply because they do not have someone like Su Yang to guide and support them.

A few more minutes later, Xie Xingfang and Elder Zhong left the area.

"We will personally send you an invitation to the Xie Family to receive your rewards later." Xie Xingfang said to them before leaving.

"I should also return to my own Sect as soon as possible. Once the news of this incident spreads, it will shake the entire Eastern Continent, and who knows what will happen at that time." Bai Lihua said.

And she continued, "By the way, congratulations on accepting so many talented disciples. I cannot wait to see their growth and how powerful the Profound Blossom Sect will become in a few years."

"You won't need to wait so long. You will see the results by next year." Su Yang said to her with a smile. "If you are convinced at that time, you should send some of your disciples over to us. They will receive the same training, too."

"Hmph! Only if it can make me speechless! And even if you somehow manage that, I will only consider it!"

Shortly after Bai Lihua left, Wang Shuren said to Su Yang, "Will you be stopping by next week? I completely understand if you want to take a break after everything that has happened today."

"Break?" Su Yang showed her a grin and spoke, "You have already rested enough this week. I will be sure to spice things up during my next visit!"

Wang Shuren's body trembled with an unusual feeling of delight after hearing his words.

"I will look forward to that." She said to him with an enchanting smile before disappearing from the area.

Once everyone besides the disciples from the Profound Blossom Sect were left, Su Yang said to Liu Lanzhi, "I will be in closed cultivation for the next three days to recover my Profound Qi. The new disciples should be returning soon, and until I return, lecture them about the Sect Rules and whatnot. I will deal with the others afterward."

Liu Lanzhi nodded.

Su Yang then turned to look at Qiuyue and spoke as his eyes began to close, "I'll trouble you to bring me back to the house."

After saying those words, Su Yang allowed his consciousness to sleep, causing his head to fall between the soft peaks on Qiuyue's chest.

"?!?!"

Qiuyue's face quickly flushed red, but she didn't dare to push him away, and she even tightly embraced his body a moment later.

### **Chapter 516 Fu Kuan's Punishmen**

"S-Su Yang?!"

Liu Lanzhi and the other disciples felt their heart skip a beat when he suddenly collapsed.

"Calm down," said Qiuyue after seeing their panicked reactions. "He's only fallen asleep after using too much Profound Qi. There are no injuries on his body as far as I can tell. He should be awake in a few days."

"Really? That's a relief." Liu Lanzhi and the others released a long sigh of relief after hearing her words.

"I am going to bring him back to his living quarters," Qiuyue said as she carried Su Yang in her arms like a sleeping princess.

"T-Thank you... um..."

Liu Lanzhi wanted to express her gratitude, but she wasn't sure how to address her.

"Qiuyue, that's my name."

"Thank you, Senior Qiuyue!" Liu Lanzhi bowed to her.

"And I am not Su Yang's Master," she suddenly added.

"T-Then you are..."

Qiuyue cleared her throat with a blushing face and nodded, "I am his Dao Companion... or something like that."

Although they had already expected this answer, Liu Lanzhi and the disciples still gasped in shock.

'To have such a beautiful woman as a Dao Companion... Su Yang really is a lucky man...' They all thought to themselves.

A Dao Companion is basically a spouse but for Cultivators, as they explore the Dao together regardless of their cultivation practice.

Once Qiuyue left the place with Su Yang, the other disciples also returned to the Sect.

Meanwhile, Liu Lanzhi and the Sect Elders prepared to receive the 997 new disciples.

A few hours later, the new Profound Blossom Sect disciples began showing up one by one at the front gates. The new disciples are then instructed to gather in one large area and wait until all of the new disciples have arrived.

In the meantime, news of Fu Kuan, Sect Leader of the Million Snakes Sect, sacrificing the lives of his own disciples spread throughout the Eastern Continent like wildfire, shocking the entire world to their core.

"What?! The Million Snakes Sect's Master sacrificed 36,000 of his own disciples' lives to summon a demonic beast to attack the Profound Blossom Sect?!"

"They even planned on attacking the Xie Family?! That's treason of the highest order!"

"I heard that the summoned beast had a cultivation base that's stronger than even the Xie Family's Ancestor, but Su Yang slew that demonic beast in a single strike! Does this make Su Yang even more fearsome than the Xie Family's Ancestor?"

"I also heard that he's destroyed an entire mountain range in the process! Just how ridiculously powerful is this guy?!"

"What's going to happen to the Million Snakes Sect now that their Sect Leader is a criminal and most of their disciples are dead?"

"The Million Snakes Sect is done for. In fact, the Xie Family has already officially announced their disbandment."

"What about all of the techniques and treasures in the Million Snakes Sect? Who does it belong to now that they have ceased to exist."

"The Xie Family, obviously!"

Normally, when a Sect is forcefully disbanded or destroyed, their techniques and treasures are up for grabs on a first come first serve basis. However, since the Million Snakes Sect used to be an Elite Sect, and they have many valuable treasures that could disturb the current power balance of the world, the Xie Family will be inheriting their wealth.

In fact, thousands of people and bandits have already begun rushing to the Million Snakes Sect in hopes of looting some treasures when they heard the news.

But unfortunately for them, the Xie Family had long arrived before everyone, preventing even an ant from getting inside the Million Snakes Sect and looting their treasures.

Right after Xie Xingfang left the Profound Blossom Sect, she'd sent a message back to her father, Lord Xie, of the situation, allowing the Xie Family to move before the news even began spreading.

When the Xie Family reached the Million Snakes Sect, they were shocked by the scene inside the Sect, where over 36,000 lifeless bodies littered the center of the Sect. As for the 4,000 disciples that were fortunate enough to keep their lives, they were found sleeping peacefully near the corpses, completely unaware of the situation.

However, when they finally woke up and learned of the truth — how most of their fellow disciples have died and that Fu Kuan, their Sect Master, was the cause of it — all 4,000 disciples were filled with disbelief, before being overwhelmed by despair and dread.

"Words cannot describe the tragedy that has occurred here. However, you are all Cultivators, powerful practitioners who overcome their weakness and fear on a daily basis. Do not let this incident be the end of your cultivation path."

The people from the Xie Family tried to calm and encourage the Million Snakes Sect disciples, but alas, this incident was simply too shocking for them.

Although some of them might recover from this traumatic experience, the majority of these disciples will most likely never be able to cultivate again.

After securing the Million Snakes Sect and collecting all of their treasures and techniques, the Xie Family buried the 36,000 sacrificed disciples outside and around the Million Snakes Sect, surrounding the entire Sect with tombstones and turning it into a cemetery.

Meanwhile, Fu Kuan was found guilty on multiple criminal charges from mass murder to treason and was given a life sentence in prison.

Furthermore, he has to receive 100 whips in public for every life he's taken, which would total up to over 3,600,000 whips.

A normal mortal would die after a few dozen whips, much less 3,600,000. However, Fu Kuan would be fed a restoration pill and given time to rest to heal his injuries whenever he's close to death so that he does not actually die.

Although it will take many years, even decades to have Fu Kuan receive all 3,600,000 whips, the Xie Family was determined to punish him and bring justice to the disciples that he'd killed.

### **Chapter 517 Qiuyue's Resolve**

Four days have passed since Su Yang collapsed after defeating the Demonic Blood Serpent and Fu Kuan, but he still hasn't shown any signs of awakening.

"He should have awakened by now..." Qiuyue stood by his side with a worried expression.

There was a possibility that Su Yang had suffered internal injuries after overspending his Profound Qi, but because of his unique cultivation technique, it prevented even someone like Qiuyue from looking inside his body, almost like it was blocked by some invisible force.

Of course, Qiuyue could easily force her way through this barrier with her cultivation base, but that could further worsen his injuries, something she cannot afford to risk.

"I have no experience in this sort of situation..." Qiuyue began pondering on what she should.

Unlike previously, when Su Yang used only a very small amount of his Celestial Qi to fight two Heavenly Spirit Realm experts at the Southern Region, he used much more Celestial Qi to defeat the Demonic Blood Serpent. Furthermore, he used a powerful technique that would burden his body even if he did not strengthen it with Celestial Qi.

'Even if I find him cultivation partners to recover his Profound Qi like before, he cannot absorb their Yin Qi if he's still unconscious...'

In the midst of her thoughts, someone entered the room and asked, "Is he still asleep?"

Qiuyue turned around to see Qin Liangyu standing by the door with a worried expression on her face, and Qiuyue nodded her head.

"This is the exact same situation as back then at the Southern Region, right? Should I start looking for partners for him? I'm sure the disciples will gladly assist his recovery."

"Although the situation may appear similar, he's exhausted himself a lot more this time. Who knows when he'll actually wake up. It could be days... even weeks from now. And unless he's awake to absorb the Yin Qi, it would be pointless to find him partners."

Qin Liangyu turned silent with a pondering expression.

A few moments later, she spoke, "Does he actually need to be awake to absorb Yin Qi? If I'm not wrong, Yin Qi is basically like Profound Qi, and albeit very little, we, as Cultivators, naturally absorb Profound Qi even when we are not actively cultivating."

"You don't mean..." Qiuyue looked at her with a dumbfounded expression.

Qin Liangyu continued to speak, "We can fill this room with Yin Qi. Although it might not be very effective, it'll definitely speed up his recovery."

"While that's a decent idea, have you thought about whose Yin Qi we should fill this room with? If it's someone below the Heavenly Spirit Realm, I doubt it would even help slightly since he's not actively absorbing it, so it'll be much less effective. And how many female Cultivators at the Heavenly Spirit Realm that are willing to do something so shameless do you think exist in this world?"

"..."

Hearing such a question, Qin Liangyu silently stared at Qiuyue, almost as though she was suggesting something.

A few moments later, when Qiuyue realized why Qin Liangyu was staring at her so intensively, she spoke with a baffled face, "You want me to do it?! Are you serious?!"

Qin Liangyu nodded, "Senior Qiuyue, not only do you meet the criteria, but you are also the best choice in this situation, as you are without a doubt the strongest female Cultivator in this world! If it's your Yin Qi, Su Yang will definitely recover much faster!"

Qiuyue's face immediately flushed with redness after imaging herself self-pleasuring while being inside the same room as Su Yang.

"T-That's absurd! As if I can do something that embarrassing! Furthermore, if you are talking about the strongest female Cultivator in this world, there exists someone else who's much stronger than myself!" Qiuyue exclaimed.

"What?! There's someone who's even stronger than Senior Qiuyue in this world?! Who would that be?!" Qin Liangyu asked with wide eyes, her voice filled with bewilderment.

"Who else besides Xiao Rong?! If it's her Yin Qi, Su Yang might even recover his spiritual energy instantly!"

"Xiao Rong?! She's actually that powerful?!"

Because they never really introduced Xiao Rong to Qin Liangyu, she never realized Xiao Rong's real abilities.

'I cannot believe it! To think that innocent little lady is actually stronger than Senior Qiuyue! And I have been treating her like a little sister!' Qin Liangyu cried inwardly.

A moment later, Qin Liangyu spoke, "But... even if Xiao Rong is stronger than you... seeing how her character is... I don't think she will be able to fill this room with Yin Qi."

Qiuyue nearly facepalmed after recalling Xiao Rong's innocence. It was certainly an impossible task for someone like her, since it would be no different than asking a child who cannot even grasp the understanding of 'self-pleasure'.

Seeing Qiuyue's expression, Qin Liangyu continued to speak, "If Senior Qiuyue is reluctant to fill this room with her Yin Qi, I can do it myself. Although I am only at the Earth Spirit Realm, I should be better than most Cultivators at my level..."

When Qin Liangyu began loosening her robes, Qiuyue suddenly spoke, "Wait!"

"Senior Qiuyue...?" she looked at her with a puzzled face.

"It's fine. I can do this."

Hearing such words, Qin Liangyu did not say anything else and nodded before tightening her robes again.

"I will leave Su Yang in your hands, Senior Qiuyue." Qin Liangyu proceeded to leave room to allow some privacy for Qiuyue.

Once Qin Liangyu closed the doors, Qiuyue looked at Su Yang's sleeping face and mumbled in a low but resolute voice, "Senior Sister Lingxi is right. If I want to remain by his side and not get overshadowed by his other partners in the future, I must strengthen my resolve and become much bolder! If I cannot even do something so simple to help the man I love, even if it's slightly embarrassing, I will have no right to be by his side, much less his partner!"

### **Chapter 518 An Unexpected Even**

After taking a moment to resolve her heart and mind, Qiuyue laid beside Su Yang on the bed and loosened her robes.

'I have never really done this before... how does one self-pleasure?' Qiuyue pondered to herself.

She then looked at the area between her legs, the most obvious spot that comes to her mind when it comes to pleasure.

After swallowing her saliva, Qiuyue began reaching for the clean slit between her legs, gently caressing it with her slender fingers.

"Mmmm... this is..."

A tingly sensation suddenly rushed through her body, causing her body to tremble slightly.

However, the feeling of pleasure did not last long and disappeared after just a few seconds.

The reason was simple — being that she was not feeling that horny and couldn't get into the mood for self-pleasure.

'This won't work...'

Knowing the cause for her lack of feeling, Qiuyue gave up trying to pleasure herself after just a few moments and began looking for methods to increase her passion.

She then turned her attention to the sleeping Su Yang beside her, and she thought to herself, 'The curse in my blood forbids me from having sexual intercourse with anyone that does not have the Sacred Moon Clan's bloodline. However, as long as it's not sexual intercourse, it should be fine, right?'

After taking another moment to resolve her heart, Qiuyue's trembling hands began reaching for Su Yang's robes.

A few seconds later, Su Yang's robes were completely loosened, allowing Qiuyue to see basically everything.

'I can't believe I am doing this to someone who's not even conscious...' Qiuyue sighed inwardly.

However, the view of Su Yang's delicious body quickly wiped away any irrelevant thoughts in her mind.

"..."

Qiuyue stared at the sleeping dragon and its treasured jewels between Su Yang's legs with her mouth salivating.

Her hands then approached the two jewels that hung below the sleeping dragon.

'It's so soft and warm...' Qiuyue thought to herself as her fingers played around with Su Yang's family jewels.

A few moments later, as though something had awakened within Su Yang, his sleeping dragon suddenly began awakening — until it stood fully erect.

"?!?!"

Qiuyue's hands jerked back when she saw this scene, as she was afraid that Su Yang might have awakened because of her.

However, even after many moments, Su Yang's eyes remained closed, and his body was as still as ever.

"He's not awake...?" Qiuyue released a deep sigh of relief after realizing that he was still asleep, but her heart continued to beat like war drums.

'How can his thing be erect when he's asleep? Is that even possible? Just how does his body function?'



Although she was puzzled and intrigued by Su Yang's body's reaction, she did not have the time to think about it, as the stiff rod standing before her had quickly occupied her mind.

The slit between Qiuyue's beautiful legs was dripping wet with Yin Qi, but she was too focused on Su Yang's penis to notice that.

A few seconds later, her hands began to reach for it once again.

"It's so big... and hard... So this is Father's manhood..."

Qiuyue mumbled as both of her hands touched every inch of his rod.

After playing around with his rod for some time, her urges to stick this thick rod into her maiden hole was incredibly high and almost irresistible, but Qiuyue managed to calm her urges by sticking Su Yang's penis into another hole — her mouth.

"Mm..."

"Mmmm..."

Slurping noises filled the room as Qiuyue gave Su Yang a fellatio that lasted for many minutes, almost like she couldn't have enough of it.

While Qiuyue sucked on Su Yang's rod, one of her hands began to reach for the soaking wet cave between her legs, rubbing the small pink pearl inside and stimulating her lust even further.

"Mmm~"

"Mmmm~!"

Although it felt weird at first, the longer she sucked on Su Yang's penis, the more experienced she got, and after half an hour, it began feeling as natural as breathing for her.

Her lips gently caressed the outside, while her soft tongue wrapped around everything on the inside.

An hour later, Qiuyue could feel the rod in her mouth suddenly become hotter.

However, she was too mesmerized to stop, so she continued, until suddenly, a large amount of sticky substance gushed out of the rod and into her mouth.

"Hm?!"

Although she was surprised by how quickly it filled her mouth, Qiuyue managed to keep all of the Yang Qi in her mouth without leaking any of it.

However, when she realized that the Yang Qi did not stop coming out even though her mouth was already full, she decided to swallow all of it to make more room.

Many moments and many mouthfuls later, when the Yang Qi finally stopped coming out, Qiuyue released her mouth from Su Yang's little brother and began panting heavily.

'Just how much Yang Qi did I swallow...?' Qiuyue rubbed her stomach with a full feeling, almost as though she'd drunk a large bowl of soup.

'However... it was tasty... I didn't know they would have a sweet flavor to it.' Qiuyue began to understand why Xiao Rong wanted to taste his Yang Qi.

Of course, she was unaware of the fact that Yang Qi normally has no taste to it and that Su Yang's Yang Qi was a special case due to his cultivation technique and the spiritual herbs he's consumed that increased his Yang Qi's quality to the point where it has a taste.

Qiuyue then looked around the room, and to her surprise, it was filled with extremely dense and rich Yin Qi — to the point where it's slightly foggy inside the room.

Not only is she a virgin, but because of her high cultivation base and her unique bloodline, her Yin Qi is richer than most women out there.

'This much Yin Qi should be enough to recover his spiritual energy...' Qiuyue thought to herself as she tightened the robes on Su Yang's body again before she left the room with her face still red.

Sometime after Qiuyue left the room, Su Yang's eyes slowly opened, and a gentle smile appeared on his face.

'That was truly an unexpected event...' he thought to himself before closing his eyes again.

## **Chapter 519 Waking Up**

After leaving Su Yang's room, Qiuyue dropped to her knees with her face flushed with redness.

'I did it... I finally did it!'

Qiuyue could still feel her heart beating crazily fast, feeling as though it could burst out of her chest at any moment now.

She couldn't believe that she'd actually manage to do something so vulgar to Su Yang, and while he was asleep, too.

'But... I probably won't be able to do it again, especially if he's not sleeping...' she sighed a moment later.

Even though she had the courage to do it this time, she wasn't confident that she could do it again, especially if he was awake, as that was simply too bold and embarrassing for a maiden like her at this moment. After all, it required her to muster all of her courage to do something like this while he was asleep, and she couldn't even imagine Su Yang watching her giving him a fetallio without giving herself a headache.

However, no matter what, this event was a huge step forward for Qiuyue, who must prepare herself for the future when the curse on her is finally lifted.

"Are you okay, Senior Qiuyue?" Qin Liangyu asked her with a worried tone after seeing her kneeling on the ground with a dazed expression.

"I-I am fine," she responded after clearing her throat and standing up.

"That's good to hear. What about Su Yang? Do you think he'll recover faster with your Yin Qi?"

"Who knows..." Qiuyue shrugged her shoulders. "We can only wait for the results now."

"By the way, there's no need for you to be so formal. We are no longer strangers, and you are someone who has experienced even more than me with him. If we have to rank our positions, you are already above me, since you have given him your body whilst I have not."

"Eh...? Senior... Sister Qiuyue hasn't cultivated with him yet?" Qin Liangyu stared at her with wide eyes filled with surprise, as she was sure that they have long dual-cultivated with each other. "If you don't mind me asking, what are you waiting for?"

"It's complicated. If I could cultivate with him, I would've already done so long ago. However, because of a curse that restricts my choices in partners, I cannot cultivate with him yet."

"I had no idea that something like that could happen... However, even if that's the case, you have been with Su Yang for longer than me, so I cannot be the senior one." Qin Liangyu said.

"One more thing. What happened to that cat? You have been teaching her how to become more 'mature', right?" Qiuyue suddenly asked her.

"Xiao Rong... she's a very quick learner. She's almost like a completely different person compared to just a few days ago."

"What have you been teaching her...?" Qiuyue looked at her with wide eyes.

Qin Liangyu blushed and spoke, "It's nothing special, really. I am used to teaching kids back in the Southern Region."

"The slower you teach her the better, since that lustful cat is the last person in this world I want to get ahead of me!" Qiuyue tightened her fists, her eyes filled with determination.

Qin Liangyu chuckled after hearing her words. She didn't expect such a childish yet competitive side from Qiuyue, someone she still regards as her Goddess.

-  
-  
-

The following day, Su Yang slowly opened his eyes again.

"What happened yesterday feels like a dream, but..." He stretched his body for a good moment before noticing the wet stain on the bed that was near his crotch area.

Although barely noticeable, there were also signs of his clothes being tampered with. However, the most damning evidence that what happened yesterday was not just a mere dream was the dense Yin Qi that still filled the room.

In this entire world, the only person who could release this much dense Yin Qi was Qiuyue and Xiao Rong, and knowing Xiao Rong's character, there could only be one person this Yin Qi belonged to.

It was obvious that Qiuyue was the one behind the Yin Qi, and he was certain that Qiuyue herself already knew that he would find out after waking up.

However, the real question was whether or not he should let her know that he was actually awake the entire time while she gave him a fetallio.

"Injured or not, unless they are heavily drugged, anyone would wake up if you play with their treasured jewels so roughly..." Su Yang chuckled after recalling how she handled his jewels in an inexperienced manner, almost like a child playing with a toy that she likes but does not understand how to play with.

"Anyway, I should hurry and absorb her Yin Qi so that it doesn't go to waste."

Su Yang then sat in the lotus position and began to cultivate, quickly absorbing all of the Yin Qi in the room.

A few hours later, after converting all of the Yin Qi to Profound Qi, Su Yang could feel his Dantian filled with spiritual energy again.

"As expected of someone from the Sacred Moon Temple, her Yin Qi is exceptionally dense and potent."

Unlike the Yin Qi that one absorbs straight from a woman's body during cultivation, Yin Qi created from self-pleasure is much weaker, even incomparably weaker.

Qiuyue's potent Yin Qi is a unique feature that only those from the Sacred Moon Temple's blood shares, as they are directly related to the Moon, the strongest source of Yin Qi in this universe, and this is also a major reason why the Moon God cursed his own bloodline, as he refuses to share and taint this powerful bloodline.

After absorbing all of Qiuyue's Yin Qi, Su Yang got off the bed and left the room.

The second he walked out of the room, Qiuyue's figure entered his view.

"Father...!"

When Qiuyue saw Su Yang's face, the event from yesterday immediately replayed inside her head, and she even began tasting his Yang Qi inside her mouth again, causing all of the words and excuses that she had spent many hours preparing to say to him when he woke up disappear like smoke.

### **Chapter 520 Gathering the New Disciples**

Seeing Qiuyue standing there like a statue, Su Yang showed a gentle smile on his face and spoke, "Thank you for going out of your way to help me recover faster. Because of your Yin Qi, my spiritual energy is fully recovered."

"I... I... I don't know what you are talking about..." Qiuyue immediately faked ignorance from her embarrassment.

On one hand, she wanted to tell him about what happened yesterday so their relationship can continue to deepen, but on the other hand, she did not want to bear the embarrassment of telling him what she did to him while he was asleep, as that might make her look like a desperate nympho.

Su Yang chuckled at her cute reaction and felt the urge to tease her, "If it wasn't you, then it must be Xiao Rong who filled the room with her Yin Qi. I must reward her for her efforts later."

"Ahem!" Qiuyue suddenly cleared her throat before speaking in a hurried manner, "A-Actually... the Yin Qi belongs to me. I just didn't want you to feel like you owe me anything, so I lied."

The smile on Su Yang's face widened, and he spoke, "Even if you say that, I am someone who cannot ignore such things. Therefore, I shall still repay the debt. And since you are my beloved daughter, I will listen to one of your requests as a reward."

"R-Really? You will do anything I want?" Qiuyue's eyes flickered with delight and excitement.

"As long as it's within my abilities," he replied with a calm head nod.

"Okay! But I will not claim this reward immediately! Give me some time to think about what I want!" she said.

Sometime later, Su Yang left the house to meet the new disciples.

"Elder Sun, can you gather all of the disciples for me?" Su Yang said to him, who was the first to enter his view.

"Su Yang! You are finally awake!" Elder Sun's face showed relief after seeing his face.

"Did something happen during my absence?" Su Yang raised an eyebrow.

"No, nothing really happened. However, all of the new disciples arrived a few days ago, but we could not do anything without you, so I am relieved to finally see you awake. This means that we can finally get things moving in the Sect."

"Thank you, I will immediately get to work."

"Where do you want the disciples to gather?" Elder Sun asked.

"The gathering area within the Outer Court is fine."

Elder Sun nodded, "Then I shall notify all of the disciples to gather there as soon as possible."

He then retrieved a communication jade and activated it with his spiritual energy, before speaking into it. "Sect Master Su has woken! All new disciples will stop whatever they are doing and gather at the gathering area in the Outer Court immediately! You have three minutes! If you are late, you can forget about being a disciple!"

Elder Sun's words quickly resounded within every jade slip in the Sect, causing all of the new and old disciples to storm out of their houses. However, not everyone was prepared to leave the house, and their appearances showed. Some of them were still in their sleeping clothes when they left the house, whilst some were still taking a bath when Elder Sun summoned them, so they left their houses with only a towel on their wet body.

Sometime later, when all of the disciples gathered, Su Yang appeared before them while wearing the Sect Master's robe, a black robe.

His domineering gaze swept the crowd, causing the disciples to tremble in awe.

Liu Lanzhi appeared beside him a few moments later and spoke, "Besides lecturing them the Sect Rules, we haven't done anything else. Their ranks, allowances, and techniques are all still undecided. Even their living quarters are all temporary."

Hearing her words, Su Yang nodded, "Thank you. I will take it from here."

He then spoke to the disciples, "As I'd mentioned during the examination, the Profound Blossom Sect has two factions now. If you wish to follow the mass and practice cultivation normally, step to my right side. If you want to walk the path of pleasure and love and become a dual cultivator, step to my left side. Although you had plenty of time to decide by now, I will still allow you five more minutes to decide which path you want to take."

Five minutes later, when the disciples had chosen their paths, Su Yang looked at the disciples on each side.

There were around 800 disciples standing on his right side, whilst the rest stood on the other side. Furthermore, out of the 100 disciples that wish to become dual cultivators, the majority of them were females, which completely flipped the male and female ratio from the past.

"Out of 100 disciples, only 9 of them are men. This is quite troublesome..." Liu Lanzhi mumbled with a frown.

The male and female ratio was very imbalanced, and she doubts that these 9 men could handle so many partners at once, especially when they are new.

However, if she leaves things as it is, many of these females will not have a cultivation partner until next year, when they recruit more disciples, which is a situation they must avoid.

Liu Lanzhi turned to look at Su Yang and spoke, "Hey... do you think you can handle these disciples until we have more male disciples?"

Su Yang raised his eyebrows. "Are you suggesting that I be their cultivation partner until then? I thought the disciples are only allowed to cultivate with fellow disciples."

However, Liu Lanzhi shook her head and spoke, "Well... that rule technically only applies to the Sect Elders, not the Sect Master. Because the previous Sect Masters only cultivated with each other and the Sect Elders, there is a misconception that the Sect Masters are not allowed to cultivate with the disciples. During its earliest days, the Sect Masters cultivated with the disciples without any restrictions."

"Furthermore, the current Profound Blossom Sect is no longer the same place it used to be. We have new disciples and new rules. If you wish to cultivate with the disciples, I have no problem with that."

Su Yang nodded and said, "We'll see how things work out first."

### **Chapter 521 Insanely Generous**

"For those of you who want to be dual cultivators, due to the imbalance in gender, things are much more complicated, so I will deal with you last," said Su Yang before he turned to look at the 800 disciples that wished to practice cultivation normally.

"All of you get in a single file line and come to me one at a time. I will give you your disciple rank now, which will be based on your talent and current cultivation base."

The 800 disciples quickly stood before him in a line.

Once a disciple approaches him, Su Yang hands them a medallion that corresponds with their disciple rank.

There were five colors of medallions; white, green, red, black, and gold.

The Outer Court disciples will be given the white medallions, whilst the Inner Court disciples will be given the green medallions. As for the red and black medallions, they are given to Core Disciples and Sect Elders. And finally, for the gold medallion, only the Legacy Disciples are allowed to carry them.

Half an hour later, once all of the disciples received their disciple ranks, Su Yang said to them, "Now that you have your ranks, I will talk about your allowances."

Every disciple within the Sect are usually given allowances in the form of spirit stones, and this is a normal practice across most Sects around the world except for the poor ones that cannot afford to hand out spirit stones to their own disciples or the strict sects that refuse to spoil their disciples, forcing them to find their own resources.

"Outer Court disciples will be given 100 spirit stones every month..."

"What?! 100 spirit stones?!" Not just the disciples but even Liu Lanzhi stared at him with wide eyes.

A hundred spirit stones can last an ordinary Cultivator for many months, even years if they use them sparingly, and to give out 100 spirit stones every month to Outer Court disciples was simply too generous — even insane. Not even the richest Sects in this world would dare to imagine handing out so many spirit stones to their Outer Court disciples.

After giving the new disciples their ranks, there are over 700 Outer Court disciples currently in the Sect, which means it would require them to spend over 70,000 spirit stones every month on the Outer Court disciples alone. Furthermore, they are bound to have more Outer Court disciples in the future. What will happen once they have 10,000 Outer Court disciples? There is simply no way they can spend one million spirit stones a month on the Court Court disciples, and this budget does not even include the Inner Court disciples, much less the Core disciples and everything else!

"S-Su Yang... 100 spirit stones...? I don't want to doubt your judgment, but don't you think you are being a 'little' bit too generous? In the past, even the Inner Court disciples received less than 10 spirit stones a month..." Liu Lanzhi said to him with her back soaked in sweat. "Even if we can afford to give them 100 spirit stones a month, they won't have enough time to cultivate so many spirit stones."

Su Yang understood why Liu Lanzhi was reluctant to give these disciples so many spirit stones, as 100 spirit stones is truly a lot of money and resources, especially if they are to be spent on mere Outer Court disciples, who are often seen as inferior disciples whose purpose is only to increase a Sect's population. However, if one looked at these Outer Court disciples as though they are as talented as Core Disciples from the other sects, they might no longer hesitate to spend so much money.

"You should stop looking at these disciples as just 'Outer Court disciples'." Su Yang said to her with a calm expression.

"Indeed, it may seem reckless to hand out so many resources to beginners, but if you consider what they will become in the future, it's a worthy investment, even if it's somewhat expensive."

"These disciples here are not your ordinary 'Outer Court disciples'. They are all geniuses that have been chosen from hundreds of thousands of people. Although they may appear insignificant right now, they all have potential that surpasses even Core Disciples from other Sects."

"Even if I understand your intent... our resources are not unlimited..." Liu Lanzhi sighed.

They may be rich right now, but they have already spent millions of spirit stones to expand and upgrade the Sect into a much better place. Compared to the Profound Blossom Sect before, the current Sect was at least two times larger, and even all of their facilities and living quarters had been upgraded. However, even with the expansion, there are still many things they needed to fix or buy for the Sect in the future.

If they continue to spend so carelessly, their resources will be depleted before they know it.

"You are worried about our funds? Have you not looked in the Treasury recently?" Su Yang asked her with a calm voice.

"I last checked a few weeks ago when I had to pay for the Sect's expansion and upgrades, but I haven't been there since then..." Liu Lanzhi shook her head.

"Then you should go and take a look right now," he said with a mysterious smile on his face. "I will even wait for you to return before we continue."

Liu Lanzhi nodded her head before rushing to the Treasury.

A few minutes later, she arrived at the White Pearl Treasury, which is still being guarded by Elder Zhao.

"Sect Master. What brings you here today?" Elder Zhao greeted her.

"Su Yang told me to check the Treasury. Do you know why?" she asked him.

"The Treasury? I'm not sure. He showed up here once right before the disciple examination to put something inside, but he told me to not look inside for the time being, so I don't know what he left inside," he responded.

"Open it. I want to see what's inside."

A few moments later, they stood before the Treasury room and the powerful formation that guarded it.

## **Chapter 522 Unimaginable Wealth**

"No matter how many times I see it, this formation is incredibly profound and complex. Just where did Su Yang learn how to create formations like this?" Elder Zhao spoke with a face filled with awe, commending the defensive formation that protected the treasury room.

"Yeah... I wonder where..." A weird smile appeared on Liu Lanzhi's face, as she couldn't possibly tell him that Su Yang had learned it in his past life when he was an Immortal.



A few moments later, Liu Lanzhi retrieved a jade slip and placed it on the formation, opening it.

The jade slip is akin to a key for a door to the formation, and in this entire world, only two individuals carry it — the Sect Masters of the Profound Blossom Sect. And unless someone has the ability to break the formation, which required someone to be at least at the Sovereign Spirit Realm and also with deep knowledge regarding formations, entering the treasury would be impossible.

Once they entered the treasury, they were dumbfounded by the scene inside.

In the middle of the room laid a small mountain of storage rings, and there were at least 100 of them bundled together.

"Why are there so many storage rings?" Elder Zhao mumbled.

"I'm more curious as to what's inside these storage rings..."

Liu Lanzhi went to pick up one of these storage rings and took a peek inside with her spiritual energy.

"Ah?!"

However, a few moments later, after seeing the inside of the storage ring, Liu Lanzhi cried out loud, her voice filled with shock, before dropping the storage ring to the floor.

"What happened, Sect Master?!" Elder Zhao was startled by her sudden screaming.

"I-Inside... look inside the storage ring..."

Elder Zhao forcefully swallowed and picked up the storage ring Liu Lanzhi dropped and peeked inside.

When he saw the mountain of spirit stones inside, he also gasped in shock. "What the heck?! There are at least a few million spirit stones in here!"

He then turned to look at the mountain of storage rings before them.

"I-Impossible... Don't tell me that all of these storage rings are filled with spirit stones...?"

Elder Zhao and Liu Lanzhi immediately began looking through all of the storage rings.

A few minutes later, they stared at each other with wide eyes.

"Hahaha..." Elder Zhao laughed in a weird manner, almost as though he'd gone crazy. "Every storage ring I'd checked contained spirit stones... and each of them had at least a few million inside..."

"It is also the same for me..." Liu Lanzhi nodded with a dazed face. "And there are 121 storage rings here... Meaning there's at least a few hundred million spirit stones within this pile of storage rings!"

"Good heavens! Just where did Su Yang obtain this much wealth?! Unless he robbed the entire Continent, he couldn't possibly have so many spirit stones!" Elder Zhao exclaimed loudly, his eyes filled with fear.

"No wonder why he was willing to give 100 spirit stones to the Outer Court disciples every month... If we have this many spirit stones, we can even afford to give them 1,000 every month!"

"100 spirit stones for the Outer Court disciples, and every month?!" Elder Zhao looked at her with wide eyes, as this is his first time hearing such a thing.

"Anyway, don't tell anyone else about this. We don't want the entire world knowing about our wealth, or it might bring unnecessary trouble."

"I won't say a word about this even if I am going to die!" Elder Zhao swore with his hand raised.

After staring at the tremendous wealth before them for a few more moments, they left the treasury.

Once Liu Lanzhu returned to Su Yang's side, she asked him in a mosquito-like voice, "Just how the hell did you obtain so many spirit stones?! Don't tell me you secretly robbed the entire Continent?!"

Su Yang chuckled at her imaginations and responded in a calm voice, "My side job."

"Side... job...?" Liu Lanzhi stared at him with a dumbfounded face.

"Anyway, now that you have seen our wealth, you shouldn't need to worry about our spending too much anytime soon."

He then turned to look at the disciples and continued to speak, "It has decided that the Outer Court disciples will receive 100 spirit stones a month. As for the Inner Court disciples, you will receive 1,000 spirit stones a month."

"1,000 spirit stones?!?!"

The disciples exclaimed loudly with their jaws on the floor.

There are a little over 80 Inner Court disciples at the moment, meaning the Sect would need to spend over 80,000 spirit stones a month on them and almost 200,000 if they include the Outer Court disciples. However, if one considers the amount of wealth the Profound Blossom Sect currently has, that budget is akin to a drop of water in the ocean.

"As for the Core disciples, since there will only be a few of you even in the future, I shall give you a limitless allowance. In other words, as long as you need spirit stones, no matter the amount, as long as it's for a reasonable cause, the Sect will provide it for you." Su Yang said.

"Unlimited... spirit stones...?"

The disciples there looked at Su Yang as though he was a God. Even the Divine Sword Sect, who has the Xie Family as their direct financial support, wouldn't dare to spend so extravagantly on their disciples.

"I know what you are all thinking," Su Yang suddenly said, "It may look like a lot of resources at first — so much so that you can save the majority of them for the future, even go shopping at your leisure. However, once you start cultivating, you will realize that isn't the case. I will be providing every single one of you a unique cultivation technique that will benefit your talents the most, and they are all at least at the Heaven-grade, which will require a lot of spiritual energy to practice. And once you reach a certain level, 100... even 1,000 spirit stones will disappear before you know it."



## Chapter 523 Imbalance

"H-Heaven-grade techniques...?"

The disciples stared at him with their faces filled with disbelief.

"Sect Master... we get to cultivate Heaven-grade techniques...?"

He nodded and said, "Yes, but you are not limited to just Heaven-grade techniques. If you can prove to me that you are serious about cultivation, I am even willing to share with you Immortal-grade cultivation techniques."

"Immortal-grade techniques!"

The disciples gasped in shock.

Heaven-grade techniques were already valuable enough in this world — to the point where the majority of Cultivators in this world live their entire life without ever seeing one. So one can imagine just how valuable Immortal-grade techniques are.

However, in Su Yang's eyes, who had connections to many powerful Sects and mysterious Clans in his previous life, he has seen countless Heaven-grade techniques and Immortal-grade techniques.

As an Immortal, his memories were basically perfect, allowing him to memorize all of the cultivation techniques he'd seen before. Therefore, if he needs cultivation techniques for these disciples, he could easily retrieve them from his memories by writing it down for them.

"I will start handing out the cultivation techniques the following day, as I will be busy tomorrow," said Su Yang.

"That's all I have for you today. Now that you have your ranks, the Sect Elders will take things from here and handle your disciple robes and living quarters."

"Follow me. I will distribute your uniforms according to your ranks." Elder Sun said before bringing the disciples away.

Once the 887 disciples left the area with Elder Sun, Su Yang turned to look at the rest of the disciples — the 100 disciples that wished to become dual cultivators.

"First and foremost, let me assign you your ranks."

Sometime later, the disciples received their ranks.

Out of the 110 disciples there, 80 of them became Outer Court disciples, whilst 27 of them became Inner Court disciples, and only 3 of them managed to become Core Disciples.

Amongst those 3 Core disciples, Yan Yan, the genius beloved by the Heavens was there.

"Are you sure that you want to be a dual cultivator? You are still too young, so you won't start cultivation until you are considered an adult at 16 years old. And considering your talent... it's best if you cultivate normally." Su Yang said to her.

However, despite his advice, Yan Yan's expression remained unchanged, and she spoke, "I want to dual cultivate."

After a moment of silence, Liu Lanzhi asked her, "In the first place, do you even know what it means to become a dual cultivator?"

And to their surprise, in response to Liu Lanzhi's question, Yan Yan shook her head.

"You want to become a dual cultivator when you don't even know the meaning behind it?" Liu Lanzhi sighed. "I'm sorry, but I think you should join the other disciples instead."

However, Yan Yan remained calm and said, "In that case, if I understand the meaning of a dual cultivator, you will have no qualms with me being a dual cultivator, right?"

"That is..."

Liu Lanzhi was speechless, as this is her first time dealing with a 12-year-old child that is as difficult as Yan Yan.

"I'll leave her to you, Su Yang..." Liu Lanzhi quickly gave up on persuading Yan Yan and handed all of her responsibility to him.

Su Yang nodded, and then he said to Yan Yan, "Dual cultivation requires two people to embrace each other with passion. In simpler words, they have sex."

"Sex...? What is that?" Yan Yan tilted her head with an innocent expression.

"We have to start from there?" A bittersweet smile appeared on his face.

"It'll be faster to show it to you."

After saying those words, Su Yang tapped on her forehead with a dim light on the tip of his finger.

A few seconds later, realistic images began appearing in Yan Yan's head.

Inside her head, there were a couple before her — a man and a woman, and they were dual cultivating with each other.

'This is what it means to dual cultivate...' Su Yang's voice resounded in Yan Yan's head as she watched the couple cultivate.

Sometime later, once the demonstration in her head ended, Su Yang asked her, "Do you still want to become a dual cultivator?"

Not even a second later, Yan Yan responded without any hesitation in her voice, "Yes."

"Is that so... then I have nothing else to say. However, you will still have to wait until you are an adult until you can dual cultivate. As of right now, even though you qualify as a Core disciple, you are also a Junior Disciple until you become an adult."

"Also, because of your unique talent, I am probably the only person in this world who can properly train you, so you will be my direct disciple."

"Yes, Master." Yan Yan nodded obediently.

'Why does she treat everyone beside him so indifferently...?' Liu Lanzhi wondered to herself.

Sometime later, Su Yang continued to speak with the other disciples, "Now that you all have your disciple ranks, let's talk about the imbalance between the disciples."

"There are nine male disciples and 101 female disciples here, and I don't mean to ridicule any of you men when I say this, but I doubt you will be able to satisfy more than one partner at a time, meaning there will be 92 female disciples without a partner."

"Now, there are three options to choose for the female disciples."

"One, you can wait until more disciples arrive next year to find a partner, or you can travel outside and find your own partner. Either way, there are not enough men in this place at this moment."

"As for the second choice, you can cultivate with me until you find a new partner."

The instant the female disciples heard the second option, before Su Yang could even continue speaking, they all responded loudly, "We would like to choose the second option, Sect Master!"

"There's still a third option, you know." He said with a smile on his face.

"We don't need to hear the third option, Sect Master! We will choose the second one regardless!" said the disciples, their eyes filled with delight.

#### **Chapter 524 Divine-grade Technique**

"Even if all of you choose the second option, I will still let you know of the third option, which would be for you to switch over to the other side and practice cultivation normally." Su Yang said a moment later.

"However, before I let any of you girls decide, I shall give the men an entire week to find their partner first."

"..."

The male disciples turned to look at the hundred beauties standing before them and swallowed nervously. There were simply too many choices, and even if they picked someone, it was not guaranteed that the female disciple would be willing to become their partner.

Furthermore, because the female disciples know that if they pick a partner, their chances of cultivating with Su Yang, one of their main reasons for becoming a dual cultivator, would be significantly reduced.

Indeed, this is why there are so many more female disciples than male disciples, as most of not all of the females there came to the Profound Blossom Sect because of Su Yang, hoping to cultivate with him.

Of course, Su Yang was aware of this problem. However, it was not as though he could force these female disciples to choose a partner. Even if there's a lack of male disciples, if the female disciples refused to cultivate with the male disciples, there was truly nothing he could do.

"As for the female disciples, I want you to give these men at least a chance. Life is not always as fair, since there will be times when you have no choices. Of course, I am not telling you to pick a partner

whom you do not even like, but if you are attracted to them, do not be afraid to become their partner, as dual cultivation is much more than just pleasure and sex."

"Starting today, and for the next seven days, I want the male disciples to knock on the door of every female disciple here and have a chat with them. As men, especially as a dual cultivator that's new to the scene, if you do not take the initiative, you will most likely never find a partner, and you cannot blame anyone else but yourself for being spineless."

Sometime later, Su Yang dismissed the disciples, and the male disciples began talking to the female disciples immediately.

"Su Yang... do you really think these female disciples will be willing to accept another partner that's not you? I can confidently say that most if not all of these female disciples came to the Sect for you." Liu Lanzhi said to him afterward, as she was also aware of the problem.

"And to be completely honest, if I were amongst those female disciples, I would refuse the male disciples just to be your partner, even if it's temporary. What will you do if that were the case for all of the female disciples? There would be no point for dual cultivation disciples to exist if there are only female disciples who are only willing to cultivate with you."

After a moment of silence, Su Yang spoke, "Even if that were the case, there is truly nothing I can do at the moment. The only possible way to fix this problem is for me to leave the Sect, which will only happen two years from now."

"However, I have already expected this to happen before even the disciple examination, hence why I limited the number of disciples we accepted this year."

"Eh? What do you have planned?" Liu Lanzhi tilted her head.

Su Yang then responded in a calm voice, "In seven days, whether the male disciples have a partner or not, I will be cultivating with the female disciples that have no partners, and then I will train all of them to become either Core Disciples or Sect Elders before next year's disciple examination, where I will be reducing the qualification standards and increasing the limit of disciples we accept. Once that happens, we will have plenty of male and female disciples. Even if the ratio is not completely balanced, at least it won't be as problematic as currently."

"And then in two years, when it's time for me to leave, these disciples will have to either find new partners from the Sect or from the outside world."

Hearing his plan, Liu Lanzhi sighed, "That's quite cruel, you know? Once they get a taste of your abilities, their standards for pleasure will become a shackle that severely limits their choices, making it incredibly hard for them to find partners who will be able to satisfy them."

"I know... but they will grow out of it eventually. Also, don't underestimate the future of dual cultivation in this world. I will definitely increase the world's standard for pleasure before I leave, and it will continue to grow even when I am gone because the Profound Blossom Sect will still be here."

"Let's hope that is that case..."

"Anyway, I will be away from the Sect tomorrow, as I have some business at the Burning Lotus Sect," said Su Yang.

"Okay." Liu Lanzhi nodded.

Sometime later, once everyone beside Su Yang and Yan Yan was gone, Yan Yan asked him, "Master, what should I do now?"

He looked at her and said, "Since you cannot dual cultivate until you are of age, we will have to strengthen your foundation until you can cultivate, and by strengthening your foundation, I mean you should cultivate normally for now."

"Follow me."

Yan Yan nodded and followed him back to his living quarters.

Once they were inside, Su Yang began writing on a piece of scroll.

"Here you go." He handed the scroll to her after it was completed, and he continued, "This is a Divine-grade cultivation technique that was once used by a very close friend of mine who also has the same talents as you. It's a grade higher than Immortal-grade techniques."

He then handed a storage ring to her and said, "There are 10 million spirit stones inside. Use it for your cultivation. It should last you until you are 16 years old."

"..."

Yan Yan stared at the storage ring and the cultivation technique in each of her hands with a dazed face, seemingly in disbelief.

### **Chapter 525 Honest Girl**

"Master, you trust me with such precious treasures?" Even though she does not understand the full value of these two gifts, Yan Yan knew they were very valuable, even priceless.

"Of course. Why wouldn't I trust you?"

"Are you not afraid that I would run away with it? We have barely met, after all."

"Then are you going to run away with those items?" Su Yang asked her with a smile on his face.

"No..." she shook her head.

"Then there's nothing to worry about," he said, still with a smile on his face.

Although 10 million spirit stones may seem like an astronomical amount of money, it's actually akin to pocket change in Su Yang's eyes, not to mention the hundreds of millions of spirit stones the Sect still has.

As for the Divine-grade cultivation technique, while it is indeed very precious and one-of-a-kind in this world, the cultivation technique is a unique one that only works for people beloved by Profound Qi like Yan Yan, so even if she gave it away, it wouldn't matter, as nobody else would be able to use it.

"Anyway, as long as it's not already occupied, you can pick any living quarters you want to live in. I will check on your progress every once in a while, and if you need help with something, just send me a message through the communication jade slip."

Yan Yan nodded, and she decided to live in the house right beside Su Yang's house.

Once everything had slowed down, Su Yang remained inside the house and began writing even more cultivation techniques, as he has over 800 disciples that are waiting for a cultivation technique before they can even start cultivating.

And for the rest of the day, until tomorrow morning, Su Yang did nothing but copy the cultivation techniques he had stored inside his mind.

The next day, Su Yang left for the Burning Lotus Sect.

"Su Yang!" Zhang Xiu Ying was pleasantly surprised to see Su Yang standing in front of her house so early in the morning.

"Are you okay? I heard about what happened during the disciple examination," she said to him with a worried face.

"Oh, that? It was nothing worth mentioning," he replied with a smile.

"That's relieving to hear. Anyway, what brings you here today?"

He nodded and said, "Do you remember what we talked about last time?"

"You don't mean..."

"Now that the disciple examination is over and we have many new disciples, I figured this would be the best time for you to come to the Profound Blossom Sect."

"B-But I still haven't spoken to my Master about this matter..."

"Then let's go talk to her right now. I am on my way to meet her, anyway."

Zhang Xiu Ying nodded and followed Su Yang to Wang Shuren's living quarters.

Sometime later, they arrived at Wang Shuren's place.

'I really hope the Master won't get too mad at me...' Zhang Xiu Ying cried inwardly as Su Yang knocked on the door.

A few moments later, Wang Shuren opened the door.

"What are you doing with Su Yang, Xiu Ying?" Wang Shuren raised an eyebrow after seeing her disciple there.

"Let's talk inside," said Su Yang.

Although she was puzzled, Wang Shuren nodded her head and welcomed them inside.

Once they were seated, Su Yang looked at Zhang Xiu Ying and spoke, "Go ahead. Tell her."



"Did you do something?" Wang Shuren looked at Zhang Xiu Ying with a frown, thinking her own disciple had done something she wasn't supposed to.

Seeing Wang Shuren's face, Zhang Xiu Ying's anxiety instantly peaked.

However, Su Yang suddenly grabbed her hand and said with a gentle smile, "If you don't tell her, she won't know."

Zhang Xiu Ying took a deep breath before speaking in a nervous but clear voice, "Master, this unfaithful disciple would like to leave the Burning Lotus Sect to become a disciple at the Profound Blossom Sect."

"..."

Wang Shuren did not immediately respond. In fact, she barely reacted to Zhang Xiu Ying's words.

After a moment of silence, Zhang Xiu Ying continued to speak, "I am forever grateful to Master for accepting someone as untalented as myself as her disciple, but this disciple has recently realized that she does not belong to this place, and Su Yang has offered me a place at the Profound Blossom Sect."

Zhang Xiu Ying even got on her knees and kowtowed to Wang Shuren.

"Although I have never told Master this, Su Yang has saved me on multiple occasions ever since I met him at the auction house, and it's not an exaggeration when I say that I owe my life to him."

"..."

Sometime later, Wang Shuren spoke in a calm and clear voice, "Relax, Xiu Ying. I won't blame you for wanting to change Sects. In fact, I have long noticed that you did not fit in with the other disciples, especially after I accepted you as my disciple."

"Does this mean..." Zhang Xiu Ying looked at her with wide eyes.

Wang Shuren nodded with a calm smile on her face, "You can join the Profound Blossom Sect. And if you ever need advice or help, you can still come find me. Though, I highly doubt you'll need me again when there's someone like Su Yang by your side."

"Thank you, Master!" Zhang Xiu Ying cried out loud, as she did not expect it to go this smoothly.

Perhaps the only reason why Wang Shuren agreed to her transferring to another Sect was because of Su Yang's presence, but none of that mattered anymore, as she has already gotten her approval.

"Go pack your things. We will leave tomorrow after I am finished with my business here." Su Yang said to Zhang Xiu Ying, who quickly left the place.

"You really like her, don't you? First, you protected her from Wang Ming, then you claimed to have her back, and now you're even doing this." Wang Shuren said to him afterward.

"She's an honest girl, and I like honest girls." He responded with a smile.

"What about me? I have never lied to you. Does that make me an honest woman?" Wang Shuren chuckled.

"There are many different types of honest people, and the two of you are completely different from one another."

"Then do you like me, too?" she asked him with a seductive look.

"If I didn't like you, I wouldn't be wasting my time here, right?" he calmly responded.

"Touche..."

A few moments later, the two of them entered the pill room, and Su Yang proceeded to train Wang Shuren for the rest of the day.

### **Chapter 526 I Always Take Care of My Own People**

The following day, Su Yang left the pill room with a relaxed expression, whilst Wang Shuren had to physically crawl with her hands in order to even move.

'I shouldn't have taken a week off...' Wang Shuren cried inwardly, feeling sore all over her body, especially the lower half.

"By the way, how are the sales going for the Earth Advancement Pills?" Su Yang asked her sometime later.

"The sales are finally starting to slow down. We have earned almost a billion spirit stones just last month," said Wang Shuren.

And she continued, "You'd expect the Xie Family to intervene with our business or at least try to get a share of the profit, but they haven't even as much as contact us about our monopoly in the marketplace. I guess they are just that afraid of offending you, the Mysterious Alchemist."

"I would say they are more cautious than afraid. If you were in their shoes, what would you do if an Alchemist of unknown origins appeared out of thin air with pill recipes that could easily change the entire cultivation world?"

"..." Wang Shuren was speechless, as she did not know what she would do in such a situation.

"That's my point. You cannot do anything besides wait. If you try to force a situation, it could easily backfire on you."

"Anyway, you can continue to monopolize the Earth Advancement Pills. The Profound Blossom Sect has enough spirit stones to last for many decades even when I am gone."

"Are you sure? Even if you don't need it, we can continue to send you a few million spirit stones every month." Wang Shuren said.

"I have already spoiled them enough," he responded with a smile.

Sometime later, Su Yang left Wang Shuren's house and went to pick up Zhang Xiu Ying before returning to the Profound Blossom Sect.

"Are you sure I am allowed to be a disciple here, Su Yang?" Zhang Xiu Ying suddenly asked him as they entered the Sect.

"Of course. Why are you asking now?" he raised an eyebrow.

"Well... I heard about the disciple examination and how difficult it was, and I have neither talent nor status, so I don't qualify to be here. The only reason I am here is because of my connection with you, and when I think about the thousands of people that have failed to get into the Sect, I feel kind of guilty..." Zhang Xiu Ying expressed her feeling of guilt.

However, Su Yang merely smiled and said, "Having connections is akin to having status, and in this world, having connections is as important as having talents if not even more. You shouldn't feel guilty about having connections. Instead, you should be feeling proud, as you have earned my trust, and that is not something easily achievable."

Hearing his words, Zhang Xiu Ying felt a little bit better.

Sometime later, Su Yang handed her a golden medallion and said, "Starting today, you will be a Legacy Disciple of the Profound Blossom Sect. It is a special position within the Sect that only I can bestow. As a Legacy Disciple, you will receive benefits that are similar to Core Disciples even if you are an Outer or Inner Court disciple. It's more of a title than anything, and currently, only the disciples who have remained with us whilst everyone else left have it. Including you, there are less than 100 people who have it."

"A-Are you sure? I am satisfied with being just an ordinary disciple, even if I am only an Outer Court disciple. I have already received enough from you, Su Yang. You shouldn't spoil me so much."

Zhang Xiu Ying felt that he was already being generous enough by allowing her to become a disciple at the Profound Blossom Sect. She also doesn't want to feel like she's taking advantage of his kindness, especially when he's someone she loves, as she truly believes that she hasn't done anything to deserve so much.

After hearing her words, Su Yang gently touched her soft cheeks with his hands and said, "I, Su Yang, always take care of my own people. Even though our meeting was somewhat forced, I have fully accepted you as my woman, and as such, it is my duty to make your life filled with nothing but bliss."

"Su Yang..."

Zhang Xiu Ying was completely speechless, and her eyes flowed with tears of happiness.

"Come with me."

Su Yang suddenly grabbed her by the waist and pulled her into a random building within the Sect that was not occupied.

"What's the matter, Su Yang?" she asked him with a puzzled face.

"Although this may sound sudden, I will be leaving this place in two years," he said to her after closing the door.

"Eh? Where will you be going?"

"Home. However, that place is not within this world."

"W-What do you mean...?"

"I am actually..."

Su Yang then proceeded to reveal his real background to Zhang Xiu Ying, explaining to her how he used to be an Immortal in his past life and that he came from a world that was entirely different from this one.

"An Immortal...?"

Zhang Xiu Ying listened to him with a dazed expression, as she was finding it hard to believe that he used to be an Immortal. However, there was no reason for Su Yang to be lying to her, so she believed him in the end.

"And that's my story. How about it? Do you still want to be with me?" he asked her after he finished his explanation.

"Yes..." she quickly nodded, and she continued, "Even if you were the reincarnation of a demon, I would still remain by your side..."

"Then let's cultivate now and make it official," he said to her before dragging her into one of the bedrooms, where he removed her robes and began pleasing her body.

A few minutes later, Zhang Xiu Ying's blissful voice resounded throughout the entire house without any restraint.

### **Chapter 527 Handing Out Cultivation Techniques Like Candies**

After cultivating for a few hours, Su Yang bestowed the Family Seal onto Zhang Xiu Ying.

"What a beautiful mark..." Zhang Xiu Ying rubbed the Family Seal below her stomach with a passionate expression, almost like a mother rubbing her stomach during pregnancy.

"Welcome to the family," Su Yang said to her with a smile.

Sometime later, once they cleaned up, Su Yang handed her a storage ring and said, "There are 10 million spirit stones and a few Immortal-grade martial techniques inside."

"I originally wanted to give you an Immortal-grade cultivation technique, but because your current cultivation technique from the Burning Lotus Sect is already deeply rooted in your foundation, unless you destroy your current cultivation and start from scratch, you cannot cultivate a new cultivation technique."

"However, give me some time, and I will create a brand new cultivation technique using your current cultivation technique as its foundation. That way, you can cultivate a superior technique without needing to restart your cultivation."

"Y-You can create new cultivation techniques...?" Zhang Xiu Ying looked at him with wide eyes. Out of everything she's heard today, this is probably the most shocking, as the amount of talent required to create a cultivation technique is massive.

"Of course. Though, I rarely do it because it's very tiring."

A moment later, Zhang Xiu Ying spoke, "But how are you going to obtain the Burning Lotus Sect's cultivation technique? Only disciples are allowed to see it, and you are even the Sect Master of another Sect."

"You shouldn't underestimate the abilities of an Immortal. I don't need to read the actual technique to understand it. We have cultivated many times now, and I can guess the cultivation technique from your Yin Qi alone," he said with a confident face.

"What...? Something like that is possible?" Zhang Xiu Ying stared at him with a dazed face.

He nodded and continued a few moments later, "Anyway, I will let the Sect Elders know of your presence. You can choose any available living quarter that's to your liking."

"Then is there a house next to your living quarters? I would like to stay near you," she asked.

"I will be moving to the Yin Yang Pavilion soon, as the Profound Qi there is much denser, and only Sect Elders are allowed to live in that area. However, since you are a Legacy Disciple and my family, I can make an exception for you."

"Thank you, Su Yang!" she said with a bright smile.

"I will find you once I am finished with your new cultivation technique. If you need anything before then, you can just contact me using the communication jade slip."

"Anyway, I have a few hundred disciples waiting for me to hand them their cultivation technique now."

"I will see you later, Su Yang." Zhang Xiu Ying said to him before they went their separate ways.

Sometime later, when Su Yang arrived at the gathering area, he summoned all of the new disciples from the normal cultivation side.

When the disciples received Su Yang's summoning, they all rushed to the gathering area with excitement, their faces filled with anticipation.

Once they were all gathered, Su Yang said to them, "I shall bestow all of your cultivation techniques that best suit your talents today. But before we start, let me just say that once the cultivation technique is in your hands, it will be your responsibility to protect it."

"Whether you lose it or give it away, if the cultivation technique somehow ends up in a place where it's not supposed to be, I will immediately cripple your cultivation and banish you from the Sect, but this should be obvious, right?"

The disciples immediately nodded their heads with a fearful expression on their faces. Even if they are in a situation where they must either give up their cultivation technique or die, they would rather die, because they find offending Su Yang even scarier than death itself.

"Good. Then get in line. The Outer Court disciples will receive their cultivation techniques first, as there is the most of you here."

The Outer Court disciples began lining up in front of Su Yang.

He then proceeded to hand the disciples their cultivation technique like giving out candies whilst giving them a brief explanation of the technique.

A few hours later, when all Outer Court disciples had received their cultivation techniques, with all of them receiving a Heaven-grade cultivation technique, Su Yang called for the Inner Court disciples.

Half an hour later, it was finally the Core Disciples' turn to receive their cultivation techniques.

"Immortal-grade cultivation technique!"

The Core Disciples stared at the priceless treasure in their hands with wide eyes and loose jaws. Up to this point, the disciples have received only Heaven-grade cultivation techniques.

And while Su Yang had already mentioned that he would be giving out Immortal-grade techniques, the disciples didn't dare to believe it until they had seen it themselves.

"Sect Master Su is truly the most generous man in this world... I would've never imagined that I would get to practice an Immortal-grade cultivation technique as a mere disciple!"

Once all of the disciples have their own cultivation technique, Su Yang said to them, "Although all of you now have a cultivation technique, you cannot win fights or hunt spiritual beasts without martial techniques. Therefore, once you have familiarized yourself with your cultivation techniques, I want all of you to choose 3 martial techniques from the Profound Library — an offensive technique to defeat your opponents, a defensive technique to fend off attacks, and lastly, a movement technique that will help you evade potentially life-threatening attacks."

"The Profound Library has three floors. The first floor contains martial techniques below the Earth-grade. The second floor contains martial techniques at the Heaven-grade. And last but not least, the third floor, which contains Immortal-grade martial techniques."

"As all of you are talented individuals, I will make this an exception and allow all of you to visit all three floors regardless of your disciple rank. However, you will only have one year to learn the techniques, as things will be different once more disciples arrive next year."

"Now, do you have any questions for me before I dismiss you?" Su Yang asked them.

### **Chapter 528 Dual Cultivation Division**

"Sect Master," one of the disciples suddenly raised his hand and spoke, "Can we choose more than three martial techniques from the Profound Library?"

"Of course you can, but I wouldn't suggest biting more than you can chew. All of the techniques in there are not your average techniques, as even the lowest grade techniques are far more profound than usual."

A few moments later, another disciple raised his hand and spoke, "Sect Master, when will we be able to choose a Master in the Sect?"

Su Yang then responded, "To tell you the truth, most of the experienced Sect Elders have long left the Sect, so the only ones left are those that have recently been promoted and without much experience in lecturing others. But even if those that have left were still here, they wouldn't be able to teach you

properly. Therefore, if you need any advice, you can find me whenever I am available. And once the Sect Elders are prepared to accept their own disciples, you can accept an official Master."

"However, by the time that happens, I'm sure that most of you here will already be strong enough to continue cultivation without a Master."

Su Yang continued to answer the disciples' question, and an hour later, after dismissing the disciples, Su Yang returned to his own living quarters to create a new cultivation technique for Zhang Xiu Ying until next week, when the dual cultivation disciples are ready to start their cultivation with him.

During that time, Su Yang would assist the new disciples who needed help, and he also moved to the Yin Yang Pavilion, where the Profound Qi is much thicker. Of course, that difference no longer mattered to him, who was already at the fifth level Heavenly Spirit Realm.

In order for him to increase his cultivation, he will need to consume valuable resources or spend many years just to gain a single level.

-  
-  
-

A week has passed in the blink of an eye, and it was finally time for the dual cultivation division to appear before Su Yang again.

At the gathering area, Su Yang stared at the 110 disciples with a calm expression.

"So only two of you managed to find a partner, huh?" Su Yang said after a glance.

"H-How did you know that, Sect Master?" The disciples were dumbfounded, as they were sure that he hadn't even been near them for the entire week.

"If you embrace someone with strong perfume, it's only natural for their perfume to stick on your body. Although none of the disciples here are using perfume, it works the same way with one's aura."

He then turned to look at the seven male disciples that did not manage to find a partner and said to them, "Do not be discouraged by this event. Although you may be in a Sect that practices dual cultivation and is filled with women, it does not automatically make it easy for you to find a partner. While it's not entirely your fault for not being attractive enough, you simply need to become a person that is attractive. Of course, there are people out there that cannot become more attractive even if they tried, but fortunately, none of you have a hopelessly ugly face."

"When I was only an Outer Court disciple, the females would not even look at me. It was only after I proved my abilities did they finally start paying attention to me." Su Yang recalled his earliest memories of the Profound Blossom Sect.

"Now then. While you may not have a cultivation partner, for the time being, you can always practice your techniques to prepare for when you actually have a partner so that you won't look like a donkey with no abilities when you have to please your partner."

"After all, it's much more shameful to lack the ability to pleasure your partner than to have no partner at all. Even if you don't have any experience, as long as you practice the techniques I will be giving you, you will be able to pleasure your partners even if you lack any experience."

"We will not forget the Sect Master's words today!" The male disciples said with serious expressions on their faces.

When they were unable to find a partner despite having so many choices after an entire week, they were so ashamed of themselves that they didn't even want to show up to the gathering. But after listening to Su Yang's words, they no longer felt as ashamed, even feeling motivated to find a partner.

Su Yang then continued to speak, "Of course, you can always travel outside of the Sect and find your partners out there. Just because you are a disciple of this Sect does not mean your partner must also be a fellow disciple. In fact, plenty of disciples in the past would rather find partners outside of the Sect. While it may not be as effective as cultivating with a fellow disciple and Cultivator, the number of people willing to be your partner outside will make up for it."

"However, you are still too new to leave the Sect, so practice your techniques for a few months before you even think about going outside."

"Yes, Sect Master!"

Sometime later, Su Yang began handing out cultivation techniques to the disciples. But before he handed them out, he explained to them the difference between normal Cultivators and Dual Cultivators.

"Cultivation techniques for us Dual Cultivators are slightly different from the rest. Unlike normal Cultivators, the majority of our techniques do not require any talent — only that you meet the gender requirement. However, even though we Dual Cultivators cultivate slightly differently, we still need to absorb Profound Qi like every other Cultivator."

"We can absorb Profound Qi directly like normal Cultivators, but as Dual Cultivators, we mainly absorb our partners' Qi before converting it into Profound Qi. It may seem like we have an extra step when compared to normal Cultivators, but that is not the case."

"When one absorbs Profound Qi directly, they must cleanse the impurities that they absorbed along with the Profound Qi afterward. But for us Dual Cultivators that absorb Qi directly from another individual, unless their body is filled with impurities, we don't absorb as many impurities if any at all. That is why Dual Cultivators in general cultivate faster than normal Cultivators, as we are not required to spend time cleansing the impurities within us as much."

### **Chapter 529 Dual Cultivation Techniques**

After explaining to the disciples the difference between Dual Cultivators and normal Cultivators as well as their advantages and disadvantages, Su Yang handed the male disciples an Immortal-grade cultivation technique that will help them convert female Yin Qi into Profound Qi with efficiency.

As for the female disciples, he also bestowed them a cultivation technique at the Immortal-grade that helps them convert Yang Qi into Profound Qi.



Once all of the disciples have a cultivation technique, Su Yang continued, "Now that all of you have a cultivation technique, it's time for the fun part. For normal Cultivators, it's only obvious that they would have martial techniques to use in combat. However, for us Dual Cultivators, our 'combat' usually takes place on the bed, as that is our main battlefield. Therefore, we will require martial techniques that are specifically made for such a unique battlefield."

He suddenly turned to look at the male disciples and said, "I will start with the male disciples first."

He then retrieved three scrolls from his robes and continued, "I have three techniques that were made specifically with men in mind here. The first technique is two techniques in one, and the Junior Disciples that have been here before all of you have already learned it. It is called 'Fingers of Pleasure' and 'World of Pleasure'."

"Fingers of Pleasure will teach you how to locate the sensitive spots on your partners' body, allowing them to feel extreme pleasure just by touching it. As for 'World of Pleasure', it will greatly increase both you and your partners' sense of pleasure during cultivation, even increasing the amount of Qi you both produce."

"The second one is called 'Bedroom Dance', which will teach you how to move your body, especially your hips, during cultivation. If mastered, your partners will always leave cultivation with her lower body completely sore. The last technique is called 'Divine Hands', and as the name suggests, it has multiple hand techniques that will help you pleasure your partners with your bare hands."

"Once you have mastered these three basic techniques, I will give you even more techniques, such as techniques for your tongues and even feet if you desire."

"T-Thank you, Sect Master! We will not let you down!"

The male disciples bowed to him after accepting these three divine techniques.

A few moments later, Su Yang turned to look at the female disciples, who were staring at him with flickering eyes. He then retrieved even more techniques, but they were for the females this time.

"The technique 'Fingers of Pleasure' and 'World of Pleasure' is not unique to men, so females can also practice it," he said to them.

"The second technique 'Heavenly Paradise' is the female version of the men's 'Bedroom Dance', and it will teach you how to move your body and hips in a way that will make your partners' tremble in pleasure and bow down before you."

"The third technique will also be 'Divine Hands', as it's a technique that can be utilized for both sides."

"And just like the male disciples, once you have mastered the basics, you can request for more techniques. Although I don't have as many techniques for females compared to techniques for men, I have at least one technique for almost every fetish in existence. So if you want techniques for a particular area, don't hesitate to ask for them."

"Thank you, Sect Master!" The female disciples bowed to him after receiving the techniques.

"Now that everyone here has received their techniques, I want you to spend another week practicing them." Su Yang said to them.

"Although you don't really need a partner to practice these techniques, it's highly recommended that you have one, as it's the most efficient way to practice them. If you don't already have a partner, you can simply pair up with someone temporary."

"I will give all of you an entire month to practice these techniques. Once the month is over, I will see for myself your progress. And if you are a female disciple that does not have a cultivation partner and is willing to cultivate with me, you can show me your progress with the techniques personally on the 'battlefield'."

When the female disciples heard his last sentence, their eyes flickered with excitement, and a captivated smile appeared on their faces.

'I can cultivate with the Sect Master in one month!' They were all thrilled by that thought and nearly couldn't contain their excitement in their body.

"That's all I have for you for today. Until next month."

After dismissing the Dual Cultivation Division, Su Yang returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion, where Liu Lanzhi was waiting for him inside her bedroom to fill her hole with his Yang Qi again.

"Let me guess. None of the male disciples managed to persuade the female disciples to become their partner." Liu Lanzhi said to him the instant he entered the room while she laid underneath the blankets on her bed.

"Shouldn't you believe in your own disciples at the Sect Master?" Su Yang said with a smile. "Two of them managed to find themselves a partner."

"Really? That's two more than I'd anticipated... I am truly surprised." Liu Lanzhi said with wide eyes, as she truly did not expect this result.

"Anyway, I have given them a month to practice the techniques before I test their abilities. As for the female disciples, I will also be cultivating with them at that time," he said.

"Well, aren't you a lucky one? You must be grinning from side to side inwardly to have so many young beauties waiting to cultivate with you. I bet most of them are still maidens." Liu Lanzhi chuckled.

"It's nothing new," he responded with a calm smile.

"Of course you are used to having beauties waiting for you. Now, why don't you let me experience for myself those techniques you gave to the disciples?" Liu Lanzhi said to him as she removed the blankets that had been hiding her naked body underneath this entire time.

Seeing her smooth skin and slender legs, Su Yang calmly approached her.

"What are you talking about? As the Sect Master, you are also going to learn these techniques, and I am going to teach them to you right now," he said as he removed his clothes.

"Oh?" Liu Lanzhi exclaimed in surprise.

### **Chapter 530 Refined Technique**

"Ahn... Ahn... Ahhhhhh!"

Liu Lanzhi's ecstatic voice resounded in the room as Su Yang demonstrated the dual cultivation techniques he'd given to the new disciples.

"This is the Bedroom Dance." Su Yang's movements suddenly changed, and his hips moved in a mesmerizing manner, almost like he was dancing.

"Ooooh!" Liu Lanzhi's body trembled in delight as she felt his sword stab her cave in a rhythmic motion, causing her cave to gush with Yin Qi.

"And this is the Divine Hands..."

Su Yang's hands suddenly grabbed her breasts and began kneading them as though they were bread.

"This is!!!"

The tips on Liu Lanzhi's breasts were fully perked and rock hard at this moment, resembling a majestic mountain.

She couldn't believe that there would exist such profound techniques in this world, as every movement by Su Yang had caused her body to feel heavenly pleasure.

Sometime later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into Liu Lanzhi, filling her stomach once again.

"How was it? That is what the peak of these techniques feel like." Su Yang asked her afterward.

"It was amazing... And if the disciples can utilize even half of these techniques' full potential, the Profound Blossom Sect... No, the entire dual cultivation world will enter a new era!" Lu Lanzhi praised.

"These techniques are merely the basics, barely scratching the surface of the world of dual cultivation," he then said.

"Oh? Then why don't you show me a technique that surpasses even these basic techniques?" Liu Lanzhi said to him with her eyes flickering with anticipation.

If such basic techniques could already overwhelm her body with pleasure, she cannot imagine what could possibly transcend such pleasure.

"Once your body can endure more, I will naturally show you more. However, as of this moment, your body won't be able to handle it."

"You make it sound as though it's something dangerous. How can pleasure be harmful?" Liu Lanzhi raised an eyebrow.

"There's no need to be impatient. And indeed, pleasure itself cannot harm one's body. However, if too much, just like anything in this world, it can affect you — mostly your mind. You know how some people go crazy after cultivating a technique that far exceeds their capabilities? This is something like that. Once you experience it, your mind will continuously crave for it, almost as though you have become addicted to it."

"So you're telling me that I could go crazy if I experience these techniques? Like a sex maniac?"

"That's right." Su Yang calmly nodded, and he continued, "You are underestimating dual cultivation. If used incorrectly, dual cultivation can become even more horrifying than any martial techniques out there."

"In my previous life, there was once an evil Dual Cultivator who enslaved an entire city with his dual cultivation technique, turning all of them into sex maniacs that were no different than animals during mating season. Whether it be other humans or even animals, they screwed everything in sight to satisfy their relentless lust."

Liu Lanzhi covered her mouth in shock, and she asked, "What happened to those people?"

"Once somebody reaches that stage, they are no different than Depraved Creatures. Although there are methods to help them, their craving for pleasure will never cease. Therefore, the Cultivators slaughtered everyone that was affected by it."

"That's..."

Liu Lanzhi was speechless, as nothing that severe has ever happened in the Eastern Continent.

"That's why you shouldn't only teach the disciples how to please others but how to control themselves, too."

"Anyway, here are all of the techniques I have used today. Even though you cannot use the men's techniques, you should still study them."

After giving Liu Lanzhi the techniques, Su Yang returned to his own room, where he continued to create Zhang Xiu Ying's cultivation technique.

Unlike copying cultivation techniques from his head, which only takes a few minutes, creating a cultivation technique from scratch usually takes years of effort. Furthermore, the more complex the technique, the longer it'll take. There are even techniques out there that have taken millions of years to create.

But luckily for Su Yang, he already has a foundation for technique, and all he needed to really do was to tweak it, hopefully increasing it by a few grades. As for the Burning Lotus Sect's cultivation technique, because it's only a Mortal-grade technique, it won't require much effort to improve for an Immortal like Su Yang.

Two weeks later, Su Yang finally finished the cultivation technique.

After looking through it a few more times to make sure it was perfect, Su Yang went to look for Zhang Xiu Ying, who was quietly cultivating inside her room.

"Su Yang!" Zhang Xiu Ying greeted him with a bright expression.

"I have completed your technique," he said as he walked into her house.

He then retrieved a scroll from his robes and extended it towards her.

"The cultivation technique has no name for now, but if you want to give it a name, you can name it whatever you like. As for its grade, it's currently at the Immortal-grade, and it's about 100 times more

effective compared to your old one. I wanted to make it at least the Sovereign-grade before giving it to you, but that would require you to wait a few more months, so I am giving it to you now to get you started. I will continue to improve the technique, and once I make it Sovereign-grade, I will give it to you."

"You... you refined a cultivation technique at the Mortal-grade to the Immortal-grade in less than a month? Is there anything in this world that you cannot do?" Zhang Xiu Ying accepted the technique with a dazed look.

"But you really don't need to do so much for me, Su Yang. I am already more than satisfied with the cultivation technique being at the Immortal-grade," she said to him a moment later.

"That won't be possible, as I always want the best for my woman." Su Yang shook his head with a smile.

"Su Yang..."

Zhang Xiu Ying was speechless, as she was overwhelmed by his kindness and affection for her.

### **Chapter 531 Grand Formation**

After giving Zhang Xiu Ying her new cultivation technique, Su Yang stayed behind for a few more hours teaching her about the technique before returning to the Yin Yang Pavilion.

Once he arrived, Su Yang knocked on the door that was right beside his own room.

A few moments later, Qiuyue appeared with raised eyebrows.

"I am going to create a Grand Formation around the Sect, but I will need your help," he said to her.

"..."

Qiuyue looked at him with wide eyes, and she spoke, "You want to create a Grand Formation for this place? Aren't you going a little bit overboard with that? A normal formation will be more than enough to protect this place for thousands of years. It's a waste of resources."

Grand Formations are advanced formations that combine three types of formations into a single grand formation, which usually consists of Offensive Formations, Defensive Formations, and Restriction Arrays.

"I know, but who knows what could happen when I am no longer in this place. I want to leave this place with my mind free of any worries," he said.

"You really care about this place, huh? Even though you don't really belong here."

"I wouldn't have cared as much if the other disciples never left the Sect and I didn't take the position of Sect Master. Although I will not be here forever, as the Sect Master, I have a responsibility to protect this place. Furthermore, this place is more than just another 'Sect' to me now, as I have personally invested too much into it. It wouldn't be an exaggeration to call this my own Sect now."

"Even if you say that..." Qiuyue slightly frowned and continued, "The extent of my knowledge with formations are only the basics. Even if you want me to, I do not have the capabilities to create a Grand Formation, so how do you want me to help?"

"I only need your cultivation base to help me power the Grand Formation. As for the formation itself, I will personally deal with it."

Qiuyue nodded.

"By the way, where's Xiao Rong and Qin Liangyu? I haven't seen them in a while." Su Yang suddenly asked her.

"Who knows. Ever since that cat wanted to become more mature, Junior Sister Liangyu has been helping her. They are probably still going at it now."

"Junior Sister Liangyu...?" Su Yang raised an eyebrow at the way she addressed Qin Liangyu as though they were close friends. "When did the two of you become so friendly?"

"That's..."

Qiuyue suddenly recalled the time she secretly gave him a Fetallio after hearing his words, causing her face to redden.

"D-Does it matter when it happened?" she quickly responded.

Su Yang smiled after seeing her reaction, and he said, "If you don't want to share it, then I won't force you. Anyway, I am going to get started with the Grand Formation now."

After leaving Qiuyue alone, Su Yang went to visit Liu Lanzhi, who has been studying the techniques Su Yang gave her since she received them.

"You want to start creating the formation now?" Liu Lanzhi was surprised to hear it, and she asked him, "How long do you think it'll take? And do you need any help?"

"It should be done in time before I have to check on the Dual Cultivation Division in two weeks," he replied.

"That fast?!" Liu Lanzhi exclaimed in a shocked voice. "Don't formations normally take years, even decades to create? Especially if it's large enough to cover an entire Sect? Just how are you going to accomplish that in just two weeks?"

Su Yang shook his head and said, "Don't use your standards on me, and don't compare me with the Array Masters in this world. It's like comparing someone who only recently started Cultivation to a Cultivation expert that has thousands of years of experience."

"Y-You're right... I don't know why I still think the logic of this world applies to you..." Liu Lanzhi nearly facepalmed herself.

If she knew what Su Yang had in mind was not any ordinary Formation but a Grand Formation, something a hundred times more complicated, her reactions would've been more shocking. In fact, Grand Formations don't even exist in this world yet, as there are no Array Masters with that knowledge.

"T-Then do you need any help?" she then asked him.

"Yes, I will need you and the disciples to scatter spirit stones around the entire Sect while I make the Formation," he nodded.

"Oh? That's quite simple. How many spirit stones are we talking about?"

After a moment of silence, Su Yang responded with three fingers raised.

"Three million spirit stones?" she tilted her head.

"Three hundred million spirit stones," he said calmly.

"THREE HUNDRED MILLION?!" Liu Lanzhi cried out loud, her eyes and mouth wide open from shock.

While the Sect has over five hundred million Spirit Stones available, which is more than enough, she didn't expect that half of it would disappear so quickly. Three hundred million spirit stones could easily support the Sect for over 100 years, but to think that Su Yang would be willing to spend so many resources for a single Formation.

"A-Are you sure the Sect needs such an expensive Formation protecting it, Su Yang...? The Million Snakes Sect is already gone, and I don't think anyone else would dare to attack us..." Liu Lanzhi asked him in a trembling voice, as she was having second thoughts after learning of the astronomical amount of resources that are required for the formation.

"It's better safe than to be sorry. Although the Sect is safe for now, who's to say it will be safe a hundred — even ten years from now? And it's only 300 million spirit stones. We still have plenty left afterward." Su Yang spoke with a calm expression.

"Even if we still have a lot of spirit stones afterward, spending 300 million spirit stones in one go is unheard of..." Liu Lanzhi sighed, feeling a headache was quickly approaching her.

### **Chapter 532 Squandering Spirit Stones**

After pondering for a few more moments, Liu Lanzhi rubbed her temples and sighed out loud, "If you truly believe that we need to spend that many spirit stones, then I have no objection. In the first place, all of those spirit stones belong to you, so you can spend them as you please."

Su Yang nodded, and he handed her a map of the entire Sect that showed all of the areas that needed to be covered in spirit stones.

Sometime later, Liu Lanzhi summoned all of the Sect Elders and Disciples — even the Junior Disciples — in the Sect.

"Did something happen, Sect Master?" Elder Sun asked her after everyone gathered.

She nodded and spoke, "I know that most of if not all of you are busy with your own cultivation, but I need all of your help with something, as it's not something a few people can achieve, and this is a personal request from Sect Master Su."

"Whatever the Sect Master needs, we will definitely help him to the best of our abilities!" The Junior Disciples quickly said.

"Su Yang needs our help? Now this is something you don't see often..." Elder Sun mumbled, as he was used to Su Yang doing everything by himself.

And he continued, "What do the Sect Masters have in mind?"

"I'm glad you asked." A weird smile appeared on Liu Lanzhi's face before she tossed a few hundred storage pouches before them.

"..."

The disciples stared at the pile of storage pouches with puzzled expressions. Are they going shopping or something?

"What's with all these storage pouches? Do you need us to buy something, Sect Master?" Sun Jingjing asked her.

"Not exactly," she quickly responded.

"There are a grand total of 300 million spirit stones in these storage pouches."

"WHAT?! THREE HUNDRED MILLION SPIRIT STONES?!"

When Liu Lanzhi revealed to them their hidden wealth, the Sect Elders and Disciples all jumped back in a shocked manner.

"A-Are you teasing us, Sect Master? Just where on earth did we suddenly obtain such massive wealth? Even if we sell this entire Sect, it wouldn't be worth half of this, much less 300 million spirit stones!" Elder Sun said to her with a dazed expression on his face, clearly in disbelief.

"You can check the storage pouches yourself, Elder Sun. I have no reason to lie to you. In fact, these spirit stones don't even belong to me. It was Su Yang who obtained them."

"Su Yang...?"

Elder Sun remained dazed. Although it made more sense with Su Yang being behind this wealth, it still didn't explain how he obtained them.

'Compared to his wealth, even the Sun Family, one of the richest families within the Eastern Continent, is not worth mentioning!' Elder Sun cried inwardly.

Liu Lanzhi smiled after seeing the disciples reaction.

'How would they react if they knew that these 300 million spirit stones is only half of what we currently have, I wonder?' she asked herself.

A few moments later, once their shock subdued, Fang Zhelan asked, "What are we going to do with so many spirit stones, Sect Master?"

"Don't die of shock when you hear this, but with these 300 million spirit stones, we are going to scatter them around the Sect." Liu Lanzhi said.

"S-Scatter them around the Sect...? I am not following..." Fang Zhelan raised her eyebrows with a confused face.

It was not just Fang Zhelan, as everyone there was puzzled as to why they would do such a thing.

"Su Yang is going to build a formation around the Sect, and it requires a massive amount of spirit stones. But I have no experience regarding formations, so this is the extent of my knowledge." Liu Lanzhi said.



"Even though it's for the Sect's safety, to spend three hundred million spirit stones on a formation... I cannot say I agree with squandering this many spirit stones..." Elder Sun sighed, feeling as though he'd aged a few years within the last few moments.

"Can I try persuading him to change his mind?" he then asked.

"I have already tried, but he appeared determined to build this formation."

"Save your breath, grandfather. Once Su Yang decides on something, he won't give up. And if he believes this formation is worth 300 million spirit stones, then I shall also believe in him."

"Haaaaa..." Elder Sun sighed again, but he could not refute Sun Jingjing's words, as he has never seen him change his mind after deciding on something.

Sometime later, Elder Sun spoke, "I understand the situation, but how do we scatter them around the Sect?"

Hearing his question, Liu Lanzhi picked up a storage pouch and grabbed a handful of spirit stones before scattering it on the floor as though it was bird food.

"..."

The disciples there watched with wide eyes, as this is the most ridiculous thing they have ever seen. The word 'wasteful' cannot even fully describe this situation.

"Just toss it around the Sect as though you are feeding birds in a park, but focus on these areas more." Liu Lanzhi then showed them the map and the locations that were marked.

"It needs to be done in two weeks, before Su Yang completes his preparations for the formation."

Sometime later, each of the disciples picked up a storage pouch and began tossing the spirit stones everywhere.

Although the disciples felt reluctant to scatter spirit stones around the Sect as though it was trash, they couldn't disobey the Sect Master's request. As for those from a poor background before entering the Sect, they were literally crying as the spirit stones left their hands and littered the floor.

However, a few of the disciples actually enjoyed it, as it made them feel as though they were flaunting their wealth.

Very quickly, spirit stones littered the Sect, making it look like a treasure trove, and it was almost impossible to take a step inside the Sect without stepping on some spirit stones.

Two weeks later, three hundred million spirit stones were completely scattered around the entire Sect, causing the place to emit a massive amount of Profound Qi.

### **Chapter 533 Coming of Age**

A few days before the Profound Blossom Sect finished scattering 300 million spirit stones around the Sect, a couple thousand miles away, in the Heavenly Swan Sect, Su Yin approached her Master, Bai Lihua, and said to her, "Master, I will be turning 16 in a few days, and I would like to celebrate my birthday and coming of age with my beloved brother."

"Oh? It feels like only last year when you joined the Heavenly Swan Sect at 10 years of age. To think it's already been 6 long years. I can still remember how you dominated the Outer Court right after you joined. Anyway, congratulations on your birthday and becoming an official adult." Bai Lihua said to her.

"Thank you, Sect Master." Su Yin replied with a smile.

"You want to visit the Profound Blossom Sect and Su Yang, right? Although it hasn't been long since their disciple examination ended, I want to see their progress, so I shall tag along with you." Bai Lihua said.

Su Yin and Bai Lihua left the Heavenly Swan Sect and began their journey to the Profound Blossom Sect on the same day.

Meanwhile, at the Profound Blossom Sect, after the disciples have scattered all 300 million spirit stones, Liu Lanzhi went to notify Su Yang.

"We have set up all 300 million spirit stones as you'd requested. You can build the formation whenever. Though, I hope you'd hurry, as the entire Sect is filled with so many spirit stones that we cannot even walk around without stepping on them." Liu Lanzhi said to him.

"I understand. I appreciate the disciples and your hard work. I will begin building the formation later today after."

"Let me know when you decide to build the formation, since I want to experience for myself how formations are created, as you rarely get to meet Array Masters, much less watch them work."

"Don't worry, I will definitely let you know. As a matter of fact, I will let every disciple know."

After Liu Lanzhi left his room, Su Yang went to get Qiuyue.

"The preparations are all complete. Once I create the Grand Formation, I will need you to do the final touches by activating the formation, completing it."

"Even though I am at the Divine Lord Realm, it's going to be exhausting to activate a Grand Formation," she said to him with a calm expression, yet the light in her eyes was flicking with anticipation.

Su Yang smiled after noticing the hint in her eyes, and he spoke, "Of course, I won't ask you to do it for free. What do you want in return?"

"You are not trying to trick me into using the favor you still owe me with this, right?" Qiuyue asked him with a doubtful gaze.

"Hahaha..." Su Yang laughed, and he said, "I wouldn't do something like that to you."

Qiuyue nodded, and after standing there to ponder for a few moments, she spoke with a slightly red face, "You are good with your hands, right? I want you to give me a long massage afterward for helping you."

"A massage, huh?" Su Yang expressed surprise after hearing her request, as he truly did not expect it.

"Very well. I shall give you a massage so good that it will leave an everlasting impression."

"Eh...? You don't have to go overboard, you know... Just a normal one is good enough..." It was Qiuyue's turn to be surprised, as she did not expect him to take her request so seriously. As a matter of fact, she was afraid of losing control of her own emotions and desire because of the massage.

"There's no need to be humble. I will definitely make sure all the stress from activating the Grand Formation will go away after the massage."

"But—"

Right as Qiuyue opened her mouth, Liu Lanzhi's voice resounded from the outside.

"Su Yang! Sect Master Bai Lihua and your sister, Su Yin, are here for you!"

"I will be right there!" Su Yang said.

"Anyway, you can look forward to it." He then said to Qiuyue before leaving her alone.

"Did I dig myself a hole with that request...? ❖❖ she mumbled in a dazed voice after Su Yang disappeared.

Meanwhile, a Sect Elder from the Profound Blossom Sect welcomed Bai Lihua and Su Yin into the Sect.

However, when the two beauties first entered the Sect and saw the spirit stones that littered everywhere on the floor like trash, they were shocked dumb.

"W-What on earth happened here? Why are there so many spirit stones on the ground? Are you by any chance doing a ritual of some sort?" Bai Lihua asked the Sect Elder, who responded with a weird smile on her face, "This is Su Yang's idea... He plans on building a formation for the Sect, and this is the preparation for that."

"A formation? The Heavenly Swan Sect also has a formation protecting the Sect, but we didn't have to do something like this...?" Bai Lihua said.

Hearing such words, the Sect Elder did not know how to respond and merely shook her head.

As Bai Lihua and Su Yin entered deeper into the Sect and saw even more spirit stones, their shock grew stronger.

'Good heavens, how many spirit stones did it cost them to make such a grand scenery?' Bai Lihua wondered to herself, still unaware of the amount of spirit stones used.

Even though Bai Lihua is the Sect Master of a renowned Elite Sect, she cannot help but have itchy hands after seeing so many spirit stones scattered freely before her, almost as though they were begging for her to take them.

Sometime later, Su Yang appeared before them.

"Elder Brother!" Su Yin's face immediately brightened after seeing him.

She wanted to run to his side and embrace him, but alas, there were simply too many spirit stones in the way for her to run anywhere.

Therefore, she could only slowly approach him.

Once Su Yang was within arms reach, Su Yin immediately lunged her body at him followed by a passionate embrace.

### **Chapter 534 Golden Sword Grand Formation**

"I had expected to be surprised today, but I didn't expect that it would be this kind of surprise. You have truly outdone yourself this time, Su Yang." Bai Lihua said to him, her gaze still lingering on the spirit stones that filled the place.

"Just how many spirit stones is this?" she suddenly asked him out of curiosity.

"Three hundred million," he calmly responded.

"Wha—?" Bai Lihua looked at him with her eyes as wide as saucers.

"Y-You must be joking, right...? Three hundred million spirit stones? Where in the world did you obtain so many spirit stones? The Regional Tournament only gave you 10 million..."

"My side job," he replied with a smile.

"..."

What kind of side job could possibly bring in hundreds of millions of spirit stones? If possible, she would like to get in on it, too.

"Are you interested?" Su Yang noticed the curiosity in her eyes and said.

"N-Not particularly... Besides, it sounds incredibly suspicious," she quickly responded. "Who knows what I have to do. Perhaps it requires one to sacrifice their own body."

"Brother, you shouldn't get involved with something so dangerous..." Su Yin also expressed her concern for him.

Su Yang chuckled after hearing their words and said, "Don't worry, it's nothing suspicious or dangerous."

"Anyway, what are you here for? I doubt you came all the way here just to see me."

"Actually, the one who wanted to see you was Su Yin, and I am merely interested in the Profound Blossom Sect's progress." Bai Lihua said.

Su Yin then spoke, "Beloved Elder Brother, do you know what day tomorrow is?"

"Tomorrow...?" Su Yang raised an eyebrow.

When he saw the anticipation in Su Yin's eyes, he showed a slight smile and said, "I see... so you are finally an adult, huh?"

"That's right! It's my coming of age tomorrow, and I want to celebrate it with you!" she said with a bright expression.

"It's your birthday, but I haven't prepared any presents yet. It seems I have failed as an elder brother," he said with an apologetic smile.

"Don't say something like that, Elder Brother! You are the best brother one could ever ask for! And I don't need any presents for my birthday, as spending time with you is already more than enough for me!"

Su Yang showed a bittersweet smile after hearing her innocent words.

In truth, the Elder Brother that Su Yin truly loves was Su Yang from before he regained his memories as an Immortal. Ever since he regained his memories, besides buying her a treasure at Snowfall City, he hasn't really done anything that could be considered 'brotherly'.

He could reveal the truth to her, but he did not want to crush Su Yin's feelings by knowing that the brother she loves is no longer in this world.

"Even if you say that you don't need a present, since it's your birthday, and the most important one in your life at that, I should give you something. Is there anything you want in particular?" Su Yang said to her.

"Give me some time to think about it," she said a moment later.

He nodded, and continued, "Anyway, I am about to build the formation. Do you want to watch its creation? It's not something you will see very often if ever again."

"It's only a formation, right? Although they are definitely not commonly seen, it's not as though there are no other Array Masters out there..." Bai Lihua said.

Su Yang merely smiled and said, "You will understand it once you witness it."

Sometime later, Su Yang summoned all of the disciples to gather in the middle of the Sect.

Once they all gathered, he said, "I should first thank you all for your efforts these past two weeks, or the preparations would've taken much longer. Now, I shall let you bare witness the fruits of your labor."

He then retrieved three scrolls with extremely complicated patterns written on them and placed them on the floor, directly in the center of the entire Sect.

Afterward, he sat before them in the lotus position and closed his eyes.

Silence filled the place, and the people there watched with high anticipation.

A few minutes later, a tremendous aura exploded from Su Yang's body, and the three scrolls emitted a golden light in reaction to the aura.

A few more moments later, Su Yang opened his eyes, and he shouted in a voice that echoed throughout the entire Sect, "Golden Sword Grand Formation!"

Boom!

The three golden scrolls immediately shot up into the sky, before falling back down around the Sect, creating three enormous golden pillars that surrounded the Profound Blossom Sect.

The disciples watched in awe, their eyes and mouths wide open.

A few moments later, Su Yang slapped the ground with his hand, causing the entire Sect to shake and the spirit stones that scattered around the Sect to jump.

When the spirit stones returned to the ground, they all glowed a bright light, and all of the Profound Qi stored within the three hundred million spirit stones that scattered around the Sect rushed towards the three golden pillars, causing them to brighten even further.

Once the golden pillars finished absorbing all of the Profound Qi from the spirit stones, the spirit stones turned into dust before being carried away by a strong gust of wind that appeared out of the blue.

"Qiuyue! Activate the Grand Formation!" Su Yang suddenly shouted.

The moment Su Yang's voice disappeared, another enormous spirit energy appeared within the Sect.

"Where is this spiritual energy coming from?!" The people there expressed deep fear after sensing Qiuyue's tyrannical spiritual energy, as it was unlike anything they have felt before.

Meanwhile, the three golden pillars reacted to Qiuyue's spiritual energy by exploding into countless pieces with each fragment exactly 30 inches in length and 3 inches wide, and if one looked closely, these fragments all had the appearance of a sword.

Once the three golden pillars were gone, the hundreds of thousands of golden swords hovering in the sky began to move.

A few minutes later, the golden swords surrounded the entire Profound Blossom Sect in a uniform manner, forming an enormous golden barrier that protected every corner of the Sect.

Once the Grand Formation was completed, the golden swords in the sky turned invisible, almost as though the entire thing was all but an illusion.

### **Chapter 535 Near-Death Experience**

"And it's finished." Su Yang said as he casually stood up after completing the Grand Formation.

However, the disciples there remained standing still with dazed expressions on their faces, almost like they saw something unbelievable.

"W-What the hell did you just do, Su Yang?!" Bai Lihua exclaimed a few moments later, her voice filled with shock, "What kind of formation did you create? I was there as a witness when the Array Masters created a formation for the Heavenly Swan Sect, but it looked nothing like this! More importantly, what was that immense amount of spiritual energy just now? It felt like a Cultivator's spiritual energy!"

"Of course, it's different from your average formation. After all, it's a Grand Formation that consists of three different superior formations," he calmly responded. "As for the spiritual energy you felt, I had requested assistance from a close friend."

"A Grand Formation...?" Bai Lihua was dumbfounded, as this is a term she has never heard of before until today.

"Just like cultivation techniques, there are multiple ranks of Formations, and the easiest and least profound are the basic Formations. Slightly more complicated and harder to create are Grand

Formation, which requires the combination of three different basic Formations. After that, we have the Divine Formations, which will require three different Grand Formations." Su Yang explained to her.

While there are even more complicated Formations than Divine Formations, it was pointless to mention it to her, as Grand Formations are already far beyond this world's knowledge.

"Want to test its abilities?" Su Yang suddenly asked her, who stared at him with wide eyes.

"How are we supposed to do that?" she asked.

"Attack me as though you are actually trying to kill me," he calmly said.

"You want me to attack you with the intent to kill? Are you sure?"

"What? Are you scared?" Su Yang smiled at her provocatively.

"Now you've said it!"

Bai Lihua suddenly retrieved a beautiful white sword from her storage ring and rushed at him with killing intent.

However, before she could even reach him, the golden swords that had been invisible suddenly reappeared, and over one hundred golden swords flew at Bai Lihua, creating many streaks of golden trails in the sky as they traveled.

"?!?!?!"

Bai Lihua's life flashes right before her eyes, as she couldn't even react to them, much less defend herself from them.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Suddenly, the golden swords exploded simultaneously, right when they were a hair width away from taking her life.

"..."

Bai Lihua dropped to her knees afterward, her body soaked in cold sweat. That was the closest she has ever been to death, and it was a fearful feeling that could not be described by mere words. If the swords did not explode, her life would've definitely been forfeited.

"A-Are you trying to kill me, you bastard?!" Bai Lihua shouted at him in an angry voice a few moments later after catching her breath.

"Of course not. I only wanted to show you the abilities of the Grand Formation. So, how was it?"

"How was it... my ass! You didn't need to humiliate me in front of so many Juniors for it!" she exclaimed.

Su Yang showed a bitter smile and said, "But that was barely 1% of the Grand Formation's full power. I truly did not intend to humiliate you."

"That was barely 1%?!" Bai Lihua's jaw dropped upon hearing this.

It was at this moment she realized that out of the hundreds of thousands of swords in the Grand Formation, only a hundred golden swords had attacked her, so Su Yang wasn't exaggerating about it being 1% of the Grand Formation's true abilities.

"How about this? As an apology for upsetting you, I will help the Heavenly Swan Sect by refining its formation," he then said.

"Eh? Really?" Bai Lihua's eyes flickered with a delight after hearing his words, and her anger quickly disappeared like smoke.

He nodded, "I won't lie to you in front of so many people."

"Good! If you want forgiveness from me, then you better do as you promised, or I will never forgive you!"

Sometime later, once the shock slowly died down, Liu Lanzhi asked him, "Su Yang, can you explain to me how this Grand Formation functions?"

"It's quite simple, really. The moment someone that's not a disciple of the Sect attacks one of our disciples within the Sect, the Grand Formation will automatically activate and erase the attacker, as it'd demonstrated with Sect Elder Bai. However, you can also activate it manually if needed."

"There are a total of 1,111,111 golden swords in the Grand Formation, and each of these golden swords are as powerful as a peak quality Heaven-grade Spiritual Treasure with a few even surpassing that. If that's not enough, the Grand Formation also has a defensive mechanism that blocks all attacks from outside of the Sect. Even if a thousand Heavenly Spirit Realm experts attack the Grand Formation at the same time, they would not even put a dent in it."

"There's also a detection mechanism that once it detects an intruder who's neither a disciple or a guest, it immediately alerting all of the Sect Elders."

Liu Lanzhi and the others listened to his explanation with a dazed face, seemingly in disbelief.

"Unbelievable... to think such a complicated and profound formation exists in this world. Just where on earth did you learn this knowledge?" Elder Sun asked him, his eyes filled with interest and suspicion.

Su Yang merely waved his hand and said, "If you read enough books, you will eventually learn a thing or two about everything in this world."

"Anyway, the Grand Formation is now complete, making the Profound Blossom Sect the safest place in this world at this moment, and as long as you stay within the Sect, you don't have to worry about any potential danger. Even if the entire world attacks us at once, not a single hair on your body will be harmed as long as you are within the Grand Formation." Su Yang said to them.

### **Chapter 536 The Ancestor's Interes**

While Su Yang explained to the disciples the Grand Formation's abilities, unbeknownst to everyone in the Profound Blossom Sect, the entire Eastern Continent was in an uproar at this moment.

Because of the Profound Qi released by the 300 million spirit stones and the spiritual energy emitted by Qiuyue when activating the Grand Formation, everybody in a ten thousand mile radius felt the unnatural



and immense amount of spiritual energy, causing them to believe that a very powerful Spiritual Treasure was being born in the area.

News of this 'Spiritual Treasure' quickly spread throughout the Eastern Continent like a massive wildfire, and within an hour, nearly every big family and Sect were aware of the situation.

And within minutes after hearing this news, these renowned families and powerful Sects began sending their experts to find the Spiritual Treasure, hoping they would be the ones to find it first.

In most cases, regardless of whoever finds the Spiritual Treasure first, fights would still occur between different factions, as people would often run into their enemies during these searches.

"Your Majesty, the search team is ready to deploy and awaits your command."

Although the Xie Family rules over the Eastern Continent, they do not dare to claim Spiritual Treasures that are naturally born theirs without working for it like everyone else, as that would instantly destroy their public image as rulers, so they must also send out their own search party.

"Your Majesty...?"

The leader of the Xie Family's search group looked at Lord Xie with a puzzled expression when he did not respond after some time.

"Dismiss the search party, we will not be participating in this one," he said in a grim voice.

"What...? But rumors say it could be a Spiritual Treasure at the mythical Divine-grade from the legends that surpasses even the Heaven-grade, and a Spiritual Treasure of that grade does not exist in this world yet! This could be the first one in this world!" The man said to him in a puzzled voice.

If they ignore this massive opportunity and miss out on the Divine-grade Spiritual Treasure, they will surely regret it!

"I know it will be a massive loss to us, but have you forgotten who lives in that area?" Lord Xie said to him with a frown.

"If I recall correctly, the Profound Blossom Sect should be in that area. But even if the Spiritual Treasure happened to be born within their property, they cannot claim it for themselves nor can they send away those who wish to search for it, as normal rules no longer apply after the birth of any Spiritual Treasure." The man said to him.

"My father's concern is not for the Profound Blossom Sect, but for the individual that belongs to the Profound Blossom Sect instead." Another voice suddenly resounded in the room.

"Your Highness!"

"Xing'er..."

Xie Xingfang approached them after entering the scene.

"If the Spiritual Treasure appeared within the Profound Blossom Sect's territory, there's not the slightest chance that 'he' wouldn't notice it," she said a moment later.

"He...? Who is this person Your Highness is referring to?" The man was still confused.

"Su Yang," said Lord Xie.

"The number one genius who reached the Heavenly Spirit Realm before he even reached 18 years old? That 'Su Yang'? Although his talent is indeed very frightening, he's only a Junior."

Lord Xie shook his head and spoke, "Do not underestimate him just because of his age, or you will regret it one day. Despite all of the information we have on him, that man has an unfathomably deep and unknown background."

"I wouldn't be surprised even if the Spiritual Treasure is already in his hands as we speak," he continued.

"Impossible..." The man mumbled with a dumbfounded face.

"Even if there's a chance that he still hasn't obtained the Spiritual Treasure, he will still be a few steps ahead of everyone else, and he will inevitably have the last laughs."

The man was deeply shocked by Lord Xie's immensely high evaluation of Su Yang, almost like he was praising a God of some sort.

"Therefore, dismiss the search team. I won't repeat myself again. We will not participate in this search." Lord Xie said to the man with a stern expression.

"As Your Majesty commands."

The man bowed to him before leaving the room.

"So? Why have you come here?" Lord Xie turned to look at his daughter afterward.

Xie Xingfang smiled and said, "Father, I would like to visit the Profound Blossom Sect."

"Why?" He quickly frowned. "You were there not long ago during their disciple examination."

"I know, but I have a feeling that something big might have happened at the Profound Blossom Sect. And if the rumors are true — that a Divine-grade Spiritual Treasure has appeared — I want to see it for myself," she responded calmly.

"I only agreed to let you outside the last time because Elder Zhong was by your side. I have recently received news of the Moonlight Blades' activity increasing. And there's still the problem with the poison in your body. I cannot agree to let you out this time. I hope you understand," he said to her.

However, Xie Xingfang remained stubborn and said, "If the Moonlight Blade is truly increasing their activities, then it would make more sense for me to travel to the Profound Blossom Sect and seek asylum there, as I feel much safer around Su Yang than I do with the guards in our family."

"Are you saying that the Profound Blossom Sect can protect you better than your own family?" Lord Xie quickly frowned.

"That's exactly what I am saying, father. Although I do not blame you for not understanding his prowess because you were not there to witness him defeating Fu Kuan and the Demonic Blood Serpent, Su Yang

is already stronger than esteemed grandfather, much less you, father." Xie Xingfang said to him with a serious expression.

"You...!" Lord Xie's face quickly reddened from anger.

However, another voice suddenly resounded in the room, and it was filled with laughter, "Since my beloved granddaughter said so, I will also believe it."

"F-Father!" Lord Xie was surprised by the Ancestor's appearance.

"My interest in Su Yang has been through the roof recently, and I would like to get to know him better, so I will accompany Xing'er to the Profound Blossom Sect. There shouldn't be any problem if I went along with her, right? Unless you are worried that I cannot protect her," said the old man as he entered the room, dumbfounding both Lord Xie and Xie Xingfang.

### **Chapter 537 Another World**

"You want to follow Xing'er to the Profound Blossom Sect, father?" Lord Xie looked at him with wide eyes, as Xie Wang, his father, hasn't really left Snowfall City for many decades.

"Are you against it?" Xie Wang looked at him with narrowed eyes, causing his body to tremble in fear.

Although he may have the appearance of a kind old man right now, Xie Wang used to rule over the Eastern Continent with an iron fist as one of the most powerful Cultivators in this world, not to mention his strict parenting.

However, ever since Xie Xingfang was born, Xie Wang became a kind old man and treated her as though she was a priceless treasure, spoiling her to no end, which would often make Lord Xie jealous.

"I wouldn't dare to object to you, father. If you wish to accompany Xing'er to the Profound Blossom Sect, then I would no longer have a reason to worry about her safety." Lord Xie said to him with a forced smile.

"Good. Now then, when do you want to leave, Xing'er?" Xie Wang turned to ask her.

"We can leave now," she quickly responded.

"When do you plan on coming back?" Lord Xie asked her a moment later.

"I don't know, but if the Moonlight Blades are increasing their activities, then I will probably stay there until things have calmed down," she said after a moment of pondering.

"..."

Lord Xie was speechless, as he didn't really think that Xie Xingfang would find the Profound Blossom Sect much safer than her own home, a place guarded by an entire army.

Sometime later, Xie Xingfang and Xie Wang left Snowfall City and began their travel to the Profound Blossom Sect.

"Thank you for coming with me, grandfather." Xie Xingfang said to him with a bright smile afterward. "If it weren't for you, it would've required much more effort to change my father's mind."

Xie Wang laughed and said, "Hahaha... don't even mention it. I will do anything for my beloved granddaughter."

And he continued, "Anyway, I am really interested in this young man, Su Yang. I have only met him a handful of times, but he always gives me the impression of someone with an almighty and otherworldly background, almost like he does not belong to this world."

"Perhaps you are right, grandfather. Su Yang's talent is wasted in this small place. If there is another world out there — one that's even more formidable and profound than this one, who knows how much he'll grow." Xie Xingfang said with her gaze filled with wonder.

"Another world, huh... That reminds me of Immortal Han Xin, who is said to be from another world." Xie Wang mumbled.

"Is that true, grandfather?" Xie Xingfang's eyes flickered with interest.

"Yes. It was a rumor that did not linger for long when I was a young man. Xing'er, this universe is unfathomably large, even endless. In such an enormous universe, I wouldn't be surprised if there were other worlds beyond our heavens and somewhere in the starry sky."

"Ever since I reached the Sovereign Spirit Realm, I cannot help but wonder what's beyond the heavens. There is this unscratchable itch inside my heart that longs to travel the starry sky, but alas, with my power, it's only but a childish dream." Xie Wang spoke in a solemn voice as he stared at the sky, seemingly filled with regret.

However, unbeknownst to him, even in the Four Divine Heavens, where all of the most powerful Cultivators in this universe gather, there exists only a handful of experts that have the ability to transverse the starry sky without the assistance of divine Spiritual Treasures.

Meanwhile, back at the Profound Blossom Sect, after explaining the Grand Formation's functions to the people before him, Su Yang dismissed the disciples, returning them to their training.

"What are the two of you going to do now?" Su Yang asked Bai Lihua and Su Yin afterward.

"If you wish to stay in the Sect for a few days, I will immediately arrange your living quarters."

"Su Yin's birthday is not until tomorrow, so we will stay here for a day or two at the very least. After that, we will see if we want to remain for any longer." Bai Lihua said to him.

"Elder Brother, can I live with you during my stay here? It's been a very long time since we have slept in the same room together," Su Yin suddenly said to him with a pleading expression.

"Even if you are my sister, the Yin Yang Pavilion is not a place for guests," he shook his head.

"Please..." Su Yin looked at him with eyes that seemed to be on the verge of tearing up.

"I don't see any issue with that, Su Yang. Just let her stay with you," Liu Lanzhi suddenly interrupted them.

"Are you sure?" Su Yang asked her.

Liu Lanzhi nodded and spoke, "The Yin Yang Pavilion used to be a sacred building that can only house the Sect Masters, but that kind of tradition is already history. After all, it's already occupying a few guests at this moment."

As of this moment, not counting Xiao Rong, whose presence is still undisclosed to Liu Lanzhi, two other individuals besides the Sect Masters resided in the Yin Yang Pavilion, and they were Qin Liangyu and Qiuyue.

"Well, since you say so." Su Yang nodded and then said to Su Yin, "Alright, you can stay with me for the time being."

"Thank you, Elder Brother! Thank you, Sect Leader Liu!" Su Yin bowed to her.

"What about you? Do you also want to stay in the Yin Yang Pavilion, Senior Bai?" Liu Lanzhi asked Bai Lihua, who nodded.

"If you don't mind having me, too."

"Then it's decided. There are plenty of rooms in the place, so you can pick any room that fancies you."

"Thank you, Sect Leader Liu."

Sometime later, Su Yang brought the guests to the Yin Yang Pavilion.

However, when they arrived, they were blocked by an incredibly beautiful lady standing by the entrance.

When Su Yin and Bai Lihua saw this woman, their eyes widened with shock.

"Y-You are!" Su Yin immediately recognized Qiuyue, as she still owes her an apology for insulting her during her visit to the Su Family many months ago.

### **Chapter 538 Su Yin's Apology**

'That person is...' Bai Lihua also recognized Qiuyue at glance, as her appearance at the Regional Tournament had left an everlasting impression in her heart.

"Hmmm? What's she doing here?" Qiuyue pointed at Su Yin with her sharp gaze, clearly displeased by her presence, as she still remembers how Su Yin had insulted her, calling her a vixen who seduced Su Yang.

"I-I am sorry!" Su Yin suddenly stepped forward and apologized to Qiuyue with a deep bow.

"Due to my frustration on that day, I had mistaken you as some vixen who kidnapped and seduced my Elder Brother, even going as far as attacking you! I do not blame you for disliking me, nor am I expecting any forgiveness from you, but I just want you to know that I have realized my mistake, and I am giving you my sincere apology!"

"Su Yin..." Bai Lihua watched the scene with wide eyes, as this is her first time seeing Su Yin acting in such a behavior.

"Forgive her, won't you?" Su Yang also said with a smile on his face.

"..."

Qiuyue remained speechless even many moments later.

Although she didn't appear to like Su Yin, even appearing to dislike her, the truth was that Qiuyue admired, even envied Su Yin for having the courage to express her love for Su Yang so openly despite their relationship as blood siblings.

Compared to herself, who cannot even express her love for Su Yang without being embarrassed by it, Su Yin was much superior.

What made Qiuyue feel even worse was the disparity between their ages. One would expect someone who has lived for thousands of years to have at least enough courage to embrace their loved ones without feeling any shame, yet she was unable to do even that.

And somehow, Su Yin, who will reach her coming of age tomorrow can already do what she cannot.

Just thinking about it made Qiuyue's heart filled with anger. However, the anger was not directed at Su Yin but rather herself — for being mentally weak, an inexcusable weakness for any Cultivator.

Sometime later, Qiuyue spoke with a calm expression, "Relax, I am not such a petty person that I cannot forgive some Junior for disrespecting me because of a misunderstanding. And you are also Su Yang's younger sister. I cannot stay mad at you forever even if I wanted to."

"Thank you, Senior Sister!" Su Yin lifted her head with a bright expression after hearing Qiuyue's words.

"Anyway, what are you doing, standing at the entrance like you are waiting for someone." Su Yang then asked her.

"Hmph. Did you already forget, Su Yang? I have helped you activate the Grand Formation, so it's time for you to keep your end of the bargain." Qiuyue said to him.

'What? So that immense amount of spiritual energy belonged to her?' Bai Lihua cried inwardly, as it finally made enough sense for her to comprehend the situation.

"Hahaha..." Su Yang suddenly laughed, and he said, "There's no need to be so impatient, Qiuyue. What are you afraid of? That I will run away after you activate the formation?"

"T-That's..." Qiuyue's face flushed with redness when she realized that she was acting too impatient because of over excitement, making a fool out of herself.

"But since you went out of your way to wait for me at the door, I will quickly return the favor." Su Yang said, before looking at Liu Lanzhi and asked her, "Can I bother you for a bit longer?"

Liu Lanzhi nodded with a smile, and she said, "Little sister, Senior Bai, please follow me. I shall show you your rooms."

"Thank you," Su Yang said to her before entering the Yin Yang Pavilion with Qiuyue.

Once they were gone, Bai Lihua asked Liu Lanzhi, "Sect Leader Liu, who on earth is that Senior? I thought she was Su Yang's Master, but after seeing the way they interact with each other, I cannot see such a relationship between them."

Liu Lanzhi then responded, "Even though we live in the same building, I don't know much about her or her relationship with Su Yang. However, you are right when you say they are not in a Master and Disciple relationship."

"Don't tell me she's Su Yang's... that? The real one." Bai Lihua suddenly said with her pinky finger raised, indicating that Qiuyue was his main lover.

"..."

Both Su Yin and Liu Lanzhi looked at her with wide eyes. Although such an idea may seem impossible at first, when they recall Su Yang's character and his playboy nature, it no longer seemed out of the question.

"A-Anyway, let me show you the rooms..." Liu Lanzhi brought the two of them inside the Yin Yang Pavilion a few minutes later.

Sometime later, they stood before Su Yang's room.

"This is your brother's room. There's only one bed, but it's big enough to fit four people. Though, if you wish to sleep on another bed, I can put one inside temporarily." Liu Lanzhi said to Su Yin, who quickly shook her head.

"This is perfect, Sect Leader Liu. I won't accept sleeping anywhere but my brother's side while I am here. Even when he used to live at the Su Family's household, we would often share the bed." Su Yin spoke with a beautiful smile on her face as she recalled the past.

"Then I won't bother you any longer..."

Once Su Yin entered Su Yang's room, Liu Lanzhi said to Bai Lihua, "Besides the room across from and beside Su Yang's room, they are all available, so you can choose any that's to your liking."

"Thank you for the hospitality, Sect Leader Liu." Bai Lihua said to her. "If you ever decide to visit the Heavenly Swan Sect, we will try our best to serve you."

"Thank you in advance, I will keep that in mind when I do visit." Liu Lanzhi said with a smile.

Meanwhile, inside the Qiuyue's room that was right next to where they were standing, Qiuyue laid on the bed with her back facing the ceiling and her body fully naked, whilst Su Yang sat behind her with a slightly surprised expression on his face.

### **Chapter 539 Body's Natural Reaction**

After Qiuyue returned to her own room with Su Yang by her side, she immediately began loosening her robes.

"Hm?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows in a surprised manner when he saw her stripping so suddenly.

After removing her robes, Qiuyue continued to take off her undergarments, until her body was completely bare.

Once she was naked, Qiuyue casually laid on the bed silently.

Su Yang stared at Qiuyue's peerless body and her smooth skin that was as pure and pale as snow. And because she was naked, her beautiful and mellow buttocks were completely out in the open.

Su Yang silently swallowed after seeing her otherworldly body that was akin to the moon's unparalleled beauty under the night sky.

Even though this is not his first time seeing her bare body, this is the first time he's taking the time to admire its beauty and grace. And amongst the countless women he's experienced, Qiuyue was definitely at the top in terms of beauty and appearance.

"What are you waiting for? Hurry up and massage me already. Activating the Grand Formation was exhausting even for me." Although her voice sounded calm, Su Yang easily noticed the slight tremble in her tone, and her face would definitely appear red if he could see it.

"Ahem... then excuse me." He cleared his throat before approaching the bed.

Once he could reach her body with his hands, Su Yang used his fingers to gently comb her shining silver hair to the side, revealing her pure back and shoulders.

"!!!"

When Su Yang moved her hair and accidentally stroked her back with his fingers, Qiuyue's body trembled slightly from surprise.

"Relax your body..."

Su Yang's gentle voice resounded as his warm palms slowly laid on her smooth skin.

After taking a few moments to let her body familiarize itself with the feeling of his touch, Su Yang's hands began moving.

"Ahhh~" A small moan accidentally escaped Qiuyue's voice when Su Yang's fingers pressed at her body.

"..."

Qiuyue quickly tightened her mouth when she realized that she'd just moaned so erotically, her face flushed with redness.

However, Su Yang said to her, "There's no need to hold back. This is a massage, and it is my responsibility to pleasure you. Let your body relax and allow your voice to naturally flow; it will make the experience much more enjoyable."

After hearing his words, Qiuyue loosened her jaws and allowed her voice to express the pleasure within her body.

"Ahhhh~"

"Ahhhhhhh~"

Qiuyue's heavenly voice quickly filled the room, whilst her body was overwhelmed by pleasure.

Meanwhile, Su Yang's hands worked from her shoulders to her back, before slowly approaching her slender legs.



"Mmmmm~"

When one of Su Yang's fingers suddenly grazed near the wet slit between her legs slightly as he massaged her legs, Qiuyue's body reacted by releasing a plentiful amount of Yin Qi through her cave.

"Oh...

Once she realized that she'd just climaxed in front of Su Yang, Qiuyue wanted to immediately stop the massage and jump into a hole and bury herself from embarrassment.

However, Su Yang's hands were firmly massaging her legs, restricting her movements with pleasure.

"There's no need to feel ashamed of your body's natural reaction for pleasure. It would be weird if it didn't react the way it did," he said to her with a smile.

'That doesn't make me feel any better.' Qiuyue cried inwardly, as she was too embarrassed to speak out loud at this moment.

As Su Yang continued to massage her body, Qiuyue's body gradually became hotter and hotter, until every cell in her body was screaming in pleasure.

Sometime later, Su Yang asked her, "I have finished massaging the back. Would you like to do the front, too?"

"..."

Qiuyue remained silent for many minutes until she finally nodded her head very slowly and subtly.

After a few more moments of stillness, Qiuyue slowly turned her body around, revealing everything but her face to him, as she had both of her arms crossed over it. However, that bashful look only made her posture even more alluring and beautiful.

Su Yang took a moment to admire her body again.

Her ample breasts were perfectly shaped with the nipples a beautiful light pink. Below her breasts was a flawlessly shaped and slender body.

Su Yang's gaze then fell upon her birthmark that was below her belly button and was shaped into a crescent, just like the moon. And slightly below her birthmark was an impeccably clean and smooth pair of lips.

"Stop leering at my body already, you pervert," Qiuyue mumbled in a mosquito-like voice when Su Yang was seemingly dazed by her body.

Su Yang merely smiled and said, "I cannot help it, as it's incredibly beautiful."

"B-Beau—?!"

Qiuyue's face flushed even more after hearing his remarks.

However, as beautiful and enticing as Qiuyue's body was to Su Yang, it was also a treasure that he cannot fully enjoy due to the curse of her bloodline.

"I will begin now," he said to her before touching her stomach a moment later.

"Ahhh!"

Qiuyue's body trembled at even the slightest touch.

Su Yang's hands then slowly moved up to her breasts, where he began massaging every corner of it.

"Ahhhhh~"

Qiuyue tightly grasped her fists as her arms were slowly loosening itself and close to revealing the current expression on her face.

Seeing her tremendous efforts to cover her face, Su Yang decided to make it his mission to have her reveal her face through his massage.

"Ahhhhh!"

Qiuyue cried out loud when Su Yang's fingers gently pinched her hard nipples, causing her body to suddenly climax again.

However, Qiuyue did not utter any complaints and continued to moan out loud.

A few minutes later, Su Yang moved his hands from her breasts to her thighs, where he massaged the area close to her bottom lips without touching it, purposefully avoiding it to tease her body.

And for the next hour, Su Yang would continue to tease the places around her soaking wet little sister without actually touching it — until Qiuyue could no longer resist her desires and finally lowered her arms, revealing to him the highly lustful expression on her face.

#### **Chapter 540 Nearly Losing Self-Control**

"If you look at me with such a face, it's going to make things difficult even for me, you know?" Su Yang said to Qiuyue after seeing her aroused expression.

After moving her arms out of her face's way, Qiuyue's hands reached to grab Su Yang's hand.

"Please... stop bullying me already, father. Just let this end..." she asked him in a pleading voice, her eyes filled with desire.

Seeing her lustful face, Su Yang smiled, and he said, "If I could, I would not hesitate to embrace you at this very moment. However, due to obvious issues, I must resist these urges that are burning within my heart. This may not be what you want, but I hope it's enough to please you for the moment."

After saying those words, Su Yang slipped one of his fingers into Qiuyue's wet cave, causing her to moan loudly.

Her legs also opened widely, allowing space for his hands to move freely.

"Ahhhn~"

Qiuyue's heavenly voice echoed in the room as Su Yang finger-fucked her tight cave.

Once she began getting used to his fingers, Su Yang slipped another finger inside, whilst his thumbs gently rubbed her pink pearl.

"Ahhh! Ahhhhh! Ahhhhhh!"

Qiuyue moaned as though she was actually having sex with Su Yang with her body soaked in sweat and Yin Qi.

"More... more... More...!" Qiuyue pleaded for more as her gaze stared at Su Yang's handsome face.

And in response to her pleading, Su Yang began moving his fingers even more intensively.

Qiuyue's lower cave gushed with Yin Qi, and she herself was feeling light-headed from climaxing so many times to Su Yang's fingers.

Sometime later, when her passion had reached its peak, Qiuyue looked at Su Yang and spoke in a dazed manner, "I love you... daddy..."

Su Yang's eyebrows twitched upon hearing Qiuyue call him 'daddy', and he turned to look at her.

However, it appeared that Qiuyue was too absorbed to realize what she'd just said, as she continued to moan in pleasure without restraint.

"Qiuyue..." Su Yang suddenly called for her.

When Qiuyue looked at him again, Su Yang suddenly stretched his neck and kissed her on the lips, whilst his fingers were still thrusting into her cave.

"Mmmm?!" Qiuyue's eyes snapped wide open at first, but as they continued to kiss, her eyes gradually closed again, allowing her to become fully absorbed in their intimacy.

A few minutes later, Su Yang withdrew his head and licked his lips in a seductive manner.

Qiuyue stared at him while panting heavily, her gaze telling him that she wanted more.

After giving her some time to breathe, Su Yang's lips connected with hers again.

"Mmmm..."

Their tongues bonded intimately, almost like two snakes curling against each other.

Many minutes later, Qiuyue experiences her biggest climax yet with Yin Qi spraying out of her cave like a broken water pipe.

And immediately after exhausting her Yin Qi, Qiuyue's conscience also left her body, causing her to fall asleep.

Once Su Yang realized that she'd lost consciousness, he stopped touching her and covered her body with new sheets that were not soaked in her Yin Qi.

However, he remained standing by her side even many minutes later, silently staring at her beautiful and satisfied face.

'It has been a long time since I last lost control over my own body and urges...' he thought to himself as he looked down at his little brother, which was bulging through his robes, looking as though it wanted to tear through his clothes and enter Qiuyue's body.

If their intimate moments had lasted any longer, perhaps he might've truly given in to his sexual desires and penetrated Qiuyue for real. However, the thought of harming her for his own desire was what kept his urges from exploding.

'I need to calm down...'

Su Yang proceeded to sit on the floor in the lotus position and cleared his mind. A few minutes later, he began absorbing the Yin Qi that filled the room.

After absorbing all of the Yin Qi, Su Yang could feel his cultivation base reaching a new level, entering the 6th level Heavenly Spirit Realm.

Once he was in complete control over his sexual urges again, Su Yang turned to look at Qiuyue, who was still sound asleep even many hours later.

After staring at her face for a few more minutes, he left her room and returned to his own room.

"Elder Brother! What took you so long! I almost fell asleep while waiting for you to return!" Su Yin said to him from the bed.

"Sorry, I had some business to attend to," he said with an apologetic smile.

"Were you with that Senior the entire time? What did you do with her?" she asked him with a curious gaze.

"I owed her a favor for helping me with the Grand Formation, so I was helping her with her request," he calmly responded.

"Hmmm... then what is your relationship with her? Could she be your lover?" Su Yin suddenly asked him.

"My lover, huh? I guess you can call her that," he said with a slight smile, not denying it.

"..."

Su Yin looked at him with a dazed face, seemingly speechless by his response. Even though she kind of expected that to be the situation, it still caused her heart to tremble.

"Anyway, it's getting late, and I am exhausted after helping her, so I am going to sleep early today. You should sleep early, too, as tomorrow is a big day for you." Su Yang said.

"Un." Su Yin nodded and made some space for him on the bed.

Once the lights were out and they were both underneath the blankets, Su Yin said in a low voice, "It's been so long since we have slept together, Elder Brother. When you disappeared, I didn't think that I would get to feel your warmth again."

Su Yin slowly moved her body closer to Su Yang and cuddled him tightly.

"I love you, Elder Brother..." she mumbled before quickly falling asleep.

Su Yang showed a warm smile before also going to sleep a few minutes later.

A few hours later, once it was past midnight, Su Yin's eyes suddenly opened.

'I have been waiting many, many years for this day, when I am finally an adult...' she thought to herself as she turned to look at the sleeping Su Yang beside her with a resolute expression on her face.

### **Chapter 541 Su Yin's Birthday**

Disclaimer and content warning: This chapter is purely fan service for Su Yang and Su Yin. It will not have any effect on the plot nor will you miss anything if you decide to skip it because of its content. Again, if you don't want to see such content, just skip it.

"Haaa... haaa... Elder Brother..." Su Yin panted as she slowly pushed away the blankets and looked at Su Yang's sleeping face, her gaze filled with affection and lust.

A few moments later, she began removing his clothes.

Under normal circumstances, Su Yang would immediately notice her unnatural movements and wake up, but due to using the majority of his Profound Qi to massage Qiuyue, he was deeply asleep from exhaustion.

Meanwhile, Su Yin continued to remove his clothes, thinking that he was only pretending to be asleep to let her do as she pleased.

Once Su Yang was fully stripped, Su Yin took a long moment to admire his handsome appearance before she began touching him all over his body.

"Elder Brother, your muscles have grown very sturdy, and you no longer look as frail as you used to," she mumbled in a gentle voice as she approached his body with her mouth wide open, and she began licking his body with her soft tongue.

"Mmmm..." Su Yin also started touching herself as she licked all over Su Yang's body.

A few minutes later, once she reached his crotch area, she stared at his sleeping dragon with a smile.

She poked the dragon's head and said, "It's time to wake up, Elder Brother..."

A moment later, as though it reacted to her playful touch, the sleeping dragon slowly became aroused.

"Wow..." Su Yin watched with wide eyes as the sleeping dragon stood up, transforming into a sword that wanted to pierce the heavens.

"Allow me to please you, Elder Brother..."

Su Yin opened her mouth wide and swallowed the entire thing in one go, and despite her small mouth, she managed to fully capture the entire dragon in her mouth.

A moment later, she began moving her mouth, sucking on the rod in an experienced manner, almost as though she was used to it.

Slurping noises filled the quiet room, and under the moonlight, Su Yin savored Su Yang's thick rod for many minutes until she was fully satisfied.

In the midst of Su Yin's Fetallio, the pleasure coming from his little brother caused Su Yang's exhausted consciousness to tremble.

"...?"

Su Yang slowly opened his eyes a few moments later, and when he saw Su Yin enjoying herself with his body, his eyes widened with shock, causing his drowsiness to instantly disappear.

Su Yin quickly noticed Su Yang awakening, and when she saw his surprised face, she said to him with a smile, "You are finally awake, Elder Brother. Did I manage to please you? Although it's been some time since I last did it, my techniques shouldn't have declined too much, right?"

Su Yang rubbed his temples and sighed, "You couldn't have waited until the morning to do this?"

"I cannot wait," she quickly shook her head, and she continued, "I have waited many years for this, and now that I am finally an adult, I want to give you my virginity as soon as possible. Although I wanted to lose it at the same time as you, because of our Father's interventions, that is no longer possible."

After saying those words, Su Yin removed her clothes and revealed to him her petite yet beautiful body.

"What do you think, Elder Brother? My body may not be as mature or ripe as some of the women in this place, but I will try my best to satisfy you."

"..."

However, Su Yang remained silent.

Seeing Su Yang's silence, Su Yin became disheartened, "Are you angry at me...? Or are you still unable to accept me because of our relationship?"

Tears began flowing from her eyes.

Su Yang sighed and said, "I have never looked or judged a woman purely because of their background or their relationships. It doesn't matter if you are my sister or not, because, before all of that, you are a woman in my eyes."

"While it does feel kind of weird, I am not someone to be bothered by morals if it doesn't touch my bottom line."

In his previous life, he has slept with countless wives, sometimes even with their daughters at the same time, so one could say that a woman's status or background does not matter to Su Yang as long as they were willing to sleep with him and he did not mind their company.

Furthermore, because his memories as an Immortal vastly overshadows his memories in this life, he could not see Su Yin as his sister even if they shared the same blood. In fact, he only sees himself playing the role of a brother for Su Yin.

"Then... Then you are not rejecting me?" Su Yin asked him in a trembling voice.

Su Yang wiped her tears with a smile on his face and asked her, "Are you really okay with someone like me? Even if I cannot be with you forever?"

Su Yin nodded, "I know you already have a partner, and I cannot compete with someone like her, but I will still love you forever, Elder Brother..."

Su Yang nodded, and a few moments later, he laid Su Yin on the bed and rubbed his sword against the small slit between her legs.

"I am going to put it in now," he warned her.

Su Yin nodded with a passionate gaze.

A few seconds later, Su Yang pushed the tip inside her small cave.

"Ahhhn~!" Su Yin moaned loudly from the pain. Even though it was only the tip, because of her small hole, her cave stretched to its limits, and she could feel her insides tearing.

"Do you want me to relieve your pain with a technique?" Su Yang asked her after seeing her painful expression.

"N-No... It hurts, but I can handle it..." Su Yin rejected without hesitation. "This pain is proof that I am not dreaming."

"Very well," he nodded before pushing his thick rod even deeper into her cave.

"Ahhhhh~!"

Streams of blood flowed from Su Yin's cave as her hymen is torn apart by Su Yang's sword, staining the white bed sheets red.

A few moments later, when Su Yang's thick rod was fully inserted into her tiny cave, Su Yin showed a blissful expression despite the intense pain.

"I... I did it... My body is finally connected with Elder Brother..." she mumbled, and continued, "Please, Elder Brother... make me a woman... your woman..."

In response to her pleading voice, Su Yang began moving his hips, thrusting his large rod into her small body, feeling as though he was trying to dig a cave that was too small for his utility.

"Ahhhn~ Ahhhn~ Ahhhhhh!" Su Yin moaned loudly as her lower body burned with passion.

Very quickly, the pain was no longer noticeable, and her body could feel nothing but pleasure.

"I am so happy right now, Elder Brother!"

"Ahhh!"

"Ahhh!"

Half an hour later, Su Yin could feel the shaft pounding her body grow even bigger inside, and she shouted, "Release it inside me! I want to accept everything from Elder Brother!"

A few more moments later, Su Yin could feel something hot rush into her body, filling her small cave instantly.

"Haaa... Haaa... Haaaaa..." Su Yin panted heavily afterward.

Once she regained her breath, she said to Su Yang, "Let's keep going, Elder Brother. Until I cannot move my body anymore, I don't want to stop making love with you."

"Don't worry, I don't plan on stopping anytime soon." Su Yang responded with a smile.

Because of the built-up lust from massing Qiuyue, he has plenty of stress to release.

A few moments later, they began moving again, and they would continue to embrace each other for the rest of the night, until Su Yin could literally no longer move her body from exhaustion.

"This is the best birthday ever," Su Yin said to him afterward. "I really love you, Elder Brother."

"Have you thought about what you want as a present?" Su Yang asked her.

After a moment of silence, she spoke, "Give me a kiss, Elder Brother."

Su Yang nodded and gently kissed her on the lips.

"Hehe... thank you, Elder Brother... Let's do this again... tonight..." Su Yin said to him in a low voice before quickly falling asleep.

#### **Chapter 542 Ignoring the Situation**

The following morning, Su Yang woke up to Liu Lanzhi's voice along with the sound of his door being knocked on.

"Su Yang! Are you awake?! We have an emergency!" she shouted as she banged on his door.

"What happened?" Su Yang opened the door a moment later to see both Liu Lanzhi and Bai Lihua standing outside his door with anxious expressions.

"I have just received news from my Sect. Apparently, a Spiritual Treasure has been born around this area, and almost every faction within the Eastern Continent has already sent people to search for it. It's going to get chaotic around here very soon." Bai Lihua said to him.

"A Spiritual Treasure...?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

If a Spiritual Treasure had truly been born, then he would've long noticed it. However, the fact that neither he nor Qiuyue noticed it made this rumor questionable.

"Rumors say it's a Spiritual Treasure at the legendary Divine-grade, one grade above the Heaven-grade." Liu Lanzhi said.

Hearing this, Su Yang became even more doubtful of this rumor, as there is simply no way he would miss the birth of a Divine-grade Spiritual Treasure.

After pondering for a few moments, Su Yang suddenly burst out laughing, as he finally realized the entire situation.

"There's no Spiritual Treasure," he revealed to them, who only stared at him with wide eyes.

"Eh? What do you mean? How do you know that?" Bai Lihua asked him.



"If there's truly a Spiritual Treasure at the Divine-grade, I would've known about it before it's even born. However, the fact that I haven't sensed anything like that is because it doesn't exist."

"As for the rumor, I also have an idea about how they came to such a conclusion."

Liu Lanzhi and Bai Lihua silently listened to him, who continued to speak, "Do you remember what happened yesterday?"

"What...? You created that Grand Formation... Eh?" Bai Lihua suddenly realized the situation and exclaimed.

"That must be it!" Liu Lanzhi also understood the situation and said, "When you activated the Grand Formation yesterday, it required a massive amount of spiritual energy! Some people must have sensed the immense and unnatural amount of spiritual energy at that time and had mistaken it as the birth of a Spiritual Treasure!"

"I don't blame them for thinking that a Spiritual Treasure had been born, as I would've also thought the same if I wasn't here to witness the truth for myself." Bai Lihua sighed.

And she continued, "What should we do now? The word has already spread throughout the entire continent. There's simply no way to stop these people from coming here."

"Why do we need to do anything?" Su Yang suddenly said, dumbfounding her.

"If they think there's a Spiritual Treasure here, then let them search for it. Sooner or later, they will realize that it was all a hoax and leave."

"That may be true... but this situation is about more than just the Spiritual Treasure. With so many people coming here, there's bound to be conflict between some people, even war. Are you saying that you won't mind being in the middle of a battlefield?"

Su Yang nodded without hesitation, "Even if there's an all-out war right outside our doors, it won't affect us in any way as long we stay inside. It's not as though any of our disciples are training outside."

"Though, if the situation somehow gets out of hand, it won't require too much effort to stop it." Su Yang said as his gaze looked at the room behind them.

"Oh, right... If things get out of hand, Senior Qiuyue can easily stop it with her overwhelming presence..." Liu Lanzhi said.

"By the way, did the Heavenly Swan Sect also send people here?" Su Yang asked her.

"Of course. When I am absent, the senior Sect Elders will act on my behalf, and under such circumstances, it's only natural for them to send some disciples to search for the Spiritual Treasure even if it's just a rumor without any evidence," she said.

"But since this is all just a misunderstanding and there's really no Spiritual Treasure, I will tell them to return to the Sect. After all, I don't want to expose my disciples in any unnecessary danger, especially when there's nothing to gain."

A few moments later, Bai Lihua spoke while looking inside his room, "By the way, where's Su Yin? I thought she stayed in your room last night."

"She's still sleeping inside. You can see for yourself if you are that worried about her," he said.

'She's still sleeping...?' Bai Lihua thought to herself, as they have been making quite some noises now, and it's almost impossible to ignore and sleep through such noises unless that person is incredibly exhausted or sleepy.

Meanwhile, Liu Lanzhi remained silent, as she had long noticed the lingering sense of one's Pure Yin Essence coming from inside the room.

'Congratulations, little sister.' Liu Lanzhi praised Su Yin inwardly, as she could imagine what had happened last night.

Sometime later, Bai Lihua left to contact the Heavenly Swan Sect regarding the situation.

Although the Sect Elders were puzzled and doubtful at first, since it came directly from Bai Lihua, they reluctantly recalled the disciples they had sent outside to the Sect.

"Let the disciples know about the situation and remind them to remain inside the Sect until all of this is over." Su Yang said to Liu Lanzhi afterward.

Once Liu Lanzhi also left, Su Yang knocked on Qiuyue's room.

"How are you feeling?" he asked her from the outside.

"..."

There was no response from Qiuyue even many moments later.

However, Su Yang remained standing outside her room, patiently waiting for a response.

A few minutes later, a low voice resounded, "I don't want to see you for a while."

"I understand," he said with a bitter smile on his face before leaving her alone.

Meanwhile, inside the room, Qiuyue laid on the bed with her entire face flushed red as she recalled everything that happened yesterday during the massage.

### **Chapter 543 Moonlight Blades“ Messenger**

'How am I going to look at him properly in the face after what happened yesterday?!' Qiuyue cried inwardly as she rolled around on the bed after recalling everything that happened yesterday.

While some of her memories were still cloudy, she could remember the vast majority of yesterday's event, where she allowed Su Yang to give her a very, very sensual massage.

Of course, she had hoped for some sort of intimate moments between them, and the massage was just an excuse for her to get closer to him, but she truly didn't expect things to escalate in such a manner.

The situation simply was too passionate for her, causing her boldness and lustful desires to go out of control.

In fact, if Su Yang did not hold himself back during the massage, she would not have minded even if he penetrated her at that moment.

'I cannot believe that I had thought to risk my life just to have sex with him...' she sighed inwardly.

And it was not just a brief thought, as she had the same thought many times throughout the massage.

As she continued to think about yesterday, her body grew hotter and hotter, until she was once again filled with lustful desires.

"I am such a perverted woman..." she mumbled.

A few moments later, she began pleasuring herself while recalling the feeling of Su Yang's fingers inside her body and the sensation of his lips, and she would continue to pleasure herself until her lust eventually calmed down.

Meanwhile, tens of thousands of miles away from the Profound Blossom Sect, Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang came to a sudden halt during their journey to the Profound Blossom Sect.

"Grandfather, there's someone following us," Xie Xingfang warned him.

Xie Wang nodded, and he spoke out loud a moment later, "Why don't you show yourself already? If you think you can hide from me with your pathetic cultivation base, then you are thinking too highly of yourself."

"Hahaha... I never intended on hiding, Senior Xie."

A man cloaked in full black suddenly stepped out of the shadows and appeared before them.

"To think the Moonlight Blades would send a single assassin at the Profound Spirit Realm to greet me... are you looking down on me?"

Xie Wang spoke in a cold voice, before releasing his Sovereign Spirit Realm cultivation base.

"Hahaha..." The assassin continued to laugh despite being choked by the immense pressure and with every bone in his body screaming from pain.

"Hmph." Xie Wang retrieved the pressure a moment later and spoke in a cold tone, "You may be a mere messenger, but don't expect me to let you live afterward. Say what you need so I can claim your worthless life. If you make any sudden moves, I will immediately kill you."

The assassin did not even bother to beg for mercy, as death was well within his expectations before he even approached them.

"I have a message for Your Highness from the Moonlight Blades," he said a moment later.

Xie Xingfang remained calm and silently waited for the message.

"You may think that you are untouchable because of your status and the Senior currently by your side, but the Moonlight Blade wants to remind you that the Xie Family is only worth something within the Eastern Continent. Very soon, someone from the Holy Central Continent will be arriving in the Eastern Continent to pick you up, and when that happens, we suggest that you hand yourself over to him

without causing too much trouble. Because if you offend the Senior from the Holy Central Continent, who knows what he might do to the Eastern Continent! Hahaha!"

"What?! Someone from the Holy Central Continent will be coming here?! Impossible!" Xie Wang exclaimed with a shocked face.

"There's no need to be so surprised, Senior. All we needed to convince that person to make a year-long journey to this place was Her Highness's special condition. When that expert heard that a peerless beauty with a Heavenly Constitution existed in this place, he immediately agreed to help the Moonlight Blade capture you, even deciding to personally make the journey."

"Within one month's time, the esteemed expert from the Holy Central Continent should arrive at the Eastern Continent. Hopefully, Your Highness has prepared herself by then, because you have nowhere to run or hide. If you still decide to run, just know that the Eastern Continent will become a hellhole because of you. And if you decide to hide, we will spare no effort making you crawl out from your hole."

"This the fate of someone born with a Heavenly Constitution — to become a tool for the strong, Your Highness." The assassin laughed madly.

"Get out of here with your nonsense, bastard from the Moonlight Blades!" Xie Wang suddenly slapped the air with his palms in a downward motion, causing an invisible force that had the weight of an entire mountain to pressure the assassin, instantly crushing him into meat paste.

After killing the assassin, Xie Wang said to Xie Xingfang, "Don't believe in their nonsense, Xing'er. A bunch of bandits and criminals like the Moonlight Blades should not have the capability to reach the Holy Central Continent, much less convince some unknown expert to capture you. They are just trying to scare you because they have run out of ideas."

"Whether his words were true or not, I am sorry for causing so much trouble for the family. If only I wasn't born with this body..." Xie Xingfang sighed.

"Nonsense! Having a Heavenly Constitution is something you should be proud of, not feel guilty about!"

"Anyway, let's hurry to the Profound Blossom Sect. Even if someone from the Holy Central Continent is coming here, we still have that unknown expert who appeared at the end of the Regional Tournament. If it's that Senior, I am sure that she has the ability to protect you. And if she is really Su Yang's Master, there's a high chance that we can receive help from her." Xie Wang said to her.

Xie Xingfang nodded, and they resumed their journey shortly after.

## **Chapter 544 Practice Dolls**

Sometime during the day, Su Yang summoned all of the disciples from the Dual Cultivation Division, as their month of practice was over and it was time for their practical exam.

"I hope you have all practiced the techniques properly during the month of time I gave you. The purpose of today's practical exam is not only to evaluate your talents but also to see what you need help with." Su Yang said to the disciples once they all gathered.

He then looked at the male disciples and said, "I don't have a lot of time today, as I have guests to entertain, so let's start already."

A few moments later, Su Yang faced the male disciples with his back and said, "Show me what you can do with your Fingers of Fulfillment on my back."

One by one, the male disciples took turns trying to locate and awaken the vital spot on his back.

After everyone had gone, Su Yang said to them, "It's not bad for a month's worth of practice, but if you want to please your partners, it'll take much more effort than this."

He then proceeded to give advice to the male disciples depending on the individual.

A few minutes later, he said to the male disciples with a nonchalant expression, "Now pretend there's a naked beauty before you and show me the Bedroom Dance technique."

"..."

The male disciples exchanged gazes with each other before awkwardly moving their bodies, humping the air before them as though they were cultivating with an invisible figure.

When the female disciples saw this scene, a few of them couldn't help but chuckle at them, causing the male disciples' faces to redden.

"The female disciples are laughing at you because your movements are trash. If you cannot learn to ignore your surroundings and focus on what's before you, then you are not fit to be a Dual Cultivator."

When the male disciples heard his words, they all straightened their emotions and began moving with more grace and sharpness, almost like they were dancing.

A few minutes later, Su Yang said to them, "Your movements were pretty decent, but it was below average overall. Do you know why?"

The disciples shook their heads.

Su Yang then stepped forward and spoke, "Then watch me do it and see for yourselves the difference."

As he said those words, Su Yang began moving his body according to the Bedroom Dance technique, but it was incomparably more elegant and smoother than the male disciples, and it completely mesmerized the female disciples within mere moments.

"Did you notice any difference besides my movements being much smoother?" Su Yang asked them once he was finished.

One of the female disciples raised her hand and spoke, "Unlike the disciples, when Sect Leader exhibited the technique, we were able to imagine very clearly your 'partner' even though she does not exist."

"Very good." Su Yang nodded.

"The reason you guys were unable to create this illusion is because you lacked passion and imagination while doing it, and it looked like I was watching a bunch of monkeys humping the air."

"Whether there's a body before you or not, if you don't do it with passion, you will never be able to utilize the full potential of the technique."

A few moments later, Su Yang retrieved a bed from his storage ring and tossed it on the ground before laying on it with his back facing the sky.

"I will give each of you a minute to use 'Divine Hands' on my shoulders and back," he said to them.

The male disciples then lined up and began using Divine Hands on his shoulders and back.

Ten minutes later, Su Yang sat up and said to the male disciples, "While none of you were above my expectations, you have made very decent progress within a month. However, I can tell that most of you have practiced your techniques alone, hence why I am going to give each of you a 'partner' to practice with in the future."

After saying those words, he retrieved nine human-sized and human-shaped dolls made of some sort of soft material that resembled human skin and tissue and handed it to the nine male disciples.

"These practice dolls will allow you to practice your techniques alone even if you do not have a partner, as these dolls feel no different than a real human. Furthermore, I made these dolls with female bodies in mind, so it will really feel like you have a female partner when you practice with them."

The male disciples accepted these practice dolls with dumbfounded expressions, feeling as though they were hugging a real human body when they held the practice dolls in their arms.

"By the way, these were personally crafted by myself, so if you break them, you won't find a replacement even if you searched the whole world." Su Yang warned them.

"T-Thank you, Sect Leader! We will take care of them as though they are our own child!"

The male disciples bowed to him with teary eyes.

"The next practical exam will be in 3 months, so hurry up and return to your rooms and start practicing."

The male disciples disappeared shortly after, leaving the female disciples standing there with dazed expressions.

Once the male disciples were gone, Su Yang turned to look at the female disciples and spoke, "Before I begin your evaluation, if you do not wish to cultivate with me, step forward."

"..."

"...."

"..."

Many moments later, not a single disciple had stepped forward — not even the two female disciples that already have a partner.

"Don't the two of you already have a partner?" One of the female disciples there asked the two disciples, causing everybody there to look at them.

"Indeed, I already have a partner, but we had an agreement with each other — that he will allow me to cultivate with the Sect Leader even if we are partners, as that was one of my conditions for accepting him as my partner."

"Me, too. I also had such an agreement with my partner, so it's fine even if he finds out," said the second disciple.

"No way... you sly foxes..." The female disciples there looked at the two of them with disbelief and admiration in their expressions, as they wouldn't have thought of such an idea without these two.

### **Chapter 545 Evaluating the Female Disciples**

"Will it be okay if we also cultivate with you even though we already have our own partner, Sect Leader?" The disciples with a partner asked him.

"As long as you and your partners agree to it, there's no reason for me to refuse." Su Yang responded with a calm expression.

"Anyway, since everyone here is willing to cultivate with me, follow me."

Sometime later, Su Yang brought the female disciples to his old living quarters and said to them, "I will evaluate one of you at a time from the oldest to the youngest, so get in line according to your age."

The female disciples immediately began forming a line based on their age with the oldest in the front and the youngest in the back.

"How old are you?"

"I'm 24 years old..."

"What about you?"

"22 years old."

"Who here is 19 years old? I am right behind you!"

"I am 19 years old!"

"Who here is the oldest among us?"

"I should be the youngest..."

Many minutes later, when the disciples had formed an orderly line, Su Yang called the first one in line inside the house.

The first and oldest disciple to be evaluated by Su Yang was a beautiful young lady who was 24 years old.

Once the disciple was inside his room, Su Yang laid on the bed and said to her, "Go ahead and use Fingers of Fulfillment on me."

The disciple nodded and took a moment to locate his vital point before poking it with Profound Qi focused at the tip of her finger.

A slight feeling of pleasure ran through Su Yang's body, and he nodded, "Very good, you have fully grasped the understanding of the technique in just one month."

"I am nowhere near worthy of your praises, Sect Leader," she said with a bashful smile.

After the first test concluded, Su Yang began loosening his robes and said, "Show me what you can do with your hands."

The disciple nodded with a slightly flushed face and approached Su Yang's naked body with her hands, touching him all over his back whilst using the technique Divine Hands.

"Not bad, but you need to relax your fingers and move them more naturally," he said a few minutes later.

"Before I evaluate the last technique, Heavenly Paradise, allow me to show you my Fingers of Fulfillment and Divine Hands." Su Yang said to her, and he continued, "Remove your clothes and lay on the bed."

The disciple nodded and quickly loosened her robes, allowing it to slide right onto the floor, revealing her slender body to him.

A few moments later, once she was on the bed, Su Yang began touching her body with his hands.

"Ahhhn! Mmmmh!"

The disciple quickly began moaning heavily as the feeling of Su Yang's hands awakened all of her lustful desires, causing her little sister to start drooling with Yin Qi.

"That is what Fingers of Fulfillment should feel like."

Su Yang said to her before moving his hands towards the lower part of her body.

"And this is Divine Hands."

The disciple could feel his fingers massaging the area around her crotch without actually touching it, yet it also felt as though his hands were touching every inch of her body at this moment.

A few minutes later, after the demonstration ended, Su Yang laid on the bed again.

"Do you know what to do next?" he asked her, who nodded with a red face.

The disciple then got on top of Su Yang and slowly inserted his thick rod into her maiden hole, splitting the cave and revealing the pink inside.

Once the entire shaft was entirely inside her hole, the disciple began moving her body and hips according to the techniques listed within the Heavenly Paradise technique.

"Ah... Ahhhn... Mmmmh...!"

Despite this being her first experience, the disciple passionately moaned as she rode Su Yang's thick sword like an expert, almost like a dancer.

A few minutes later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into her body.

"Aaaaaahhhh~"

Feeling his hot Yang Qi gushing into her small hole, the disciple's body trembled.

"H-How was it, Sect Leader...?" she asked him afterward.



"You were too focused on pleasuring yourself instead of your partner. While it's important to pleasure yourself, this technique is meant for pleasuring others, as it's your partners' responsibility to pleasure you. Here, let me show you."

Su Yang suddenly held her by the hips and began moving his hips.

"Ahhhhh! Mmmmmh! Ahhhhhn!"

The disciple screamed in pleasure as Su Yang pounded her body intensely.

A few minutes later, the disciple collapsed onto his chest with her entire body sparkling in sweat.

"If your partner is competent then he should have no problem pleasing you like this," he said to her. "If he cannot... then I suggest you find a new partner, or you can teach him yourself."

Sometime later, Su Yang retrieved another practice doll from his storage ring and handed it to the female disciple.

However, unlike the practice dolls he gave to the male disciples, this one had a body that resembled a man's body, and it even had a long and thick rod at the bottom that was already fully erect and hard.

"I have crafted this practice doll based on my own body, so you can practice your techniques with it whenever I am too busy to assist you," he said to her.

"This is... the Sect Leader...?"

The female disciple stared at the practice doll with a dazed expression, seemingly in awe. She could tell at a glance that the practice doll's body was exactly like Su Yang's body from the shape of its body to the size of its rod.

"Are... Are you sure I can have something this precious, Sect Leader?" she asked him with a shaky voice.

When she saw Su Yang nodding his head, the disciple's expression immediately became filled with delight and happiness.

"Thank you, Sect Leader! I will treasure and treat this practice doll as though it's really the Sect Leader, and I will even use it every day!" she said to him with a bright smile before storing the practice doll into her storage ring.

## **Chapter 546 Birthday Presen**

After he finished evaluating the first female disciple, Su Yang continued to call the disciples into his room one at a time, before allowing them to perform their techniques on him.

"Your performance overall was above average, but your hip movements were a bit stiff and awkward. You should move it like this..." Su Yang said to the disciple before demonstrating the technique on her body.

"Ahhhn~"

The disciple moaned loudly, and a few minutes later, her body collapsed onto the bed with an exhausted expression on her face.

Sometime later, Su Yang also gifted her a practice doll.

"T-This is..."

The female disciple was dumbfounded at first, but when she realized that the doll was crafted based on Su Yang's body, her eyes flickered with excitement, and she said, "Thank you, Sect Master! I will surely practice with it every day so that I can please you properly next time!"

After spending a few hours cultivating with the new disciples and evaluating their techniques and giving them advice, Su Yang said to them afterward, "If you ever feel like checking your progress with the techniques, you can find me, and I will evaluate you like I did today. Regardless, I will re-evaluate everyone here in three months."

Su Yang dismissed the disciples shortly after, before returning to the Yin Yang Pavilion.

Once Su Yang was gone, the female disciples began talking with each other.

"Did you also receive a practice doll from the Sect Leader?"

"I did! I cannot believe how perfectly it resembles his body! It's almost like I am staring at the Sect Leader's body itself when I look at the practice doll!"

"I cannot wait to start practicing with it... hehe..."

Meanwhile, at the Yin Yang Pavilion, when Su Yang entered his room, he noticed Su Yin sitting on the bed with a dozed off expression, almost as though she was half-asleep.

"You sure slept well," he said to her with a smile.

"Good morning, Elder Brother..." she said to him.

"Morning? It's already midday," he said.

"What?! It's already so late?!" Su Yin's eyes snapped open and turned to look at the window.

"I have overslept! Why didn't you wake me up earlier, Elder Brother? Now I have less time to spend with you on my birthday..." she sighed in a sorrowful tone.

"Anyway, how do you want to spend your birthday? Is there anything special you want to do?" Su Yang asked her a moment later.

"No, I am content with just being around you, Elder Brother," she quickly replied.

"Though, I would like to see what Elder Brother normally does as the Sect Leader."

"Besides cultivating with the Sect Elders and the new disciples, I also lecture the disciples from the Cultivation Division, and I sometimes lecture the Junior Disciples. Why don't I give you a tour around the Sect?"

"That sounds fun!" she nodded.

Sometime later, Su Yang brought Su Yin outside and gave her a tour around the entire Sect starting from the Center Court.

"As you know, this is the Yin Yang Pavilion, where the Sect Leaders dwell."

"This tall building is called the Morning Wood Pagoda, and it's where Sect Elders normally gather for meetings."

"Morning Wood Pagoda...?" Su Yin chuckled at the Sect's weird naming sense.

After walking around the Center Court, Su Yang brought her to the Inner Court, and the first place they visited was the Chamber of Embrace.

"This is where disciples used to cultivate with guests that come from the outside."

Su Yang began recalling his experience at this place.

After seeing the Chamber of Embrace, Su Yang continued to tour around the Inner Court with Su Yin.

However, besides living quarters for the Inner Court disciples, there really wasn't much to see inside the Inner Court.

Once they reached the Outer Court, Su Yang showed her the building he used to live in, even recalling some of the things that had happened during his time as an Outer Court disciple.

Sometime later, they arrived at the White Pearl Treasury, where Elder Zhao was sleeping behind the counter like always.

"Su Yang... and the little sister? What brings you here today?"

"I am just giving her a tour around the Sect," said Su Yang.

He then turned to look at Su Yin and spoke, "Is there anything you want from this place? I will pay it for you."

Su Yin shook her head.

Sometime later, the siblings returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion.

"Thank you for the tour, Elder Brother. I finally have a grasp of your living environment after all this time," Su Yin said to him.

Su Yang merely smiled.

A moment later, he retrieved a storage ring and said, "Su Yin, here."

He extended his hand, offering the storage ring to her.

"What is this, Elder Brother?" Su Yin looked at it with a puzzled expression.

"It's your birthday present," he said.

"Eh? But I don't need any presents..."

"I know, but I am giving it to you anyway. Take a look inside."

Su Yin nodded and accepted the storage ring.

When she looked inside the storage ring and saw what was inside, she gasped in shock.

"E-Elder Brother... this is..." she looked at him with wide eyes.

"There are 10 million Spirit Stones, a peak quality Heaven-grade Spiritual Treasure, and three Immortal-grade Martial Techniques that suit your Cultivation Technique inside. Although it's not much, it'll assist your Cultivation for many years."

"T-Thank you, Elder Brother! I will treasure this gift for the rest of my life!" Su Yin tightly grasped the storage ring in her hands before rushing to embrace Su Yang.

And for the remainder of the day, the two of them remained inside the room, spending their time passionately with each other.

The following day, Xie Xingfang and Xie Wang arrived at the Profound Blossom Sect, surprising everyone within the Sect with their sudden visit, especially Liu Lanzhi, who didn't even know how to react at first.

"Su Yang! We have an emergency!" Liu Lanzhi knocked on his door early in the morning again.

### **Chapter 547 Xie Family's Reques**

"What is it this time? Don't tell me another Spiritual Treasure was born?" Su Yang opened the door a moment later to see an anxious Liu Lanzhi waiting outside.

"This is much worse!" Liu Lanzhi quickly said after seeing him, and she continued, "The Xie Family is here! And it's not just Her Highness this time! The previous head of the Xie Family, their Ancestor is also here this time!"

'Ancestor? That old man?' Su Yang raised his eyebrows, wondering why they would be here. 'Could this be about the Spiritual Treasure, too?'

"Anyway, they are currently being led to this place, as they have called for your presence, and I am just here to notify you."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Bring them to the Morning Wood Pagoda. We'll have our conversation there."

Meanwhile, Xie Xingfang and Xie Wang had just arrived at the Inner Court after following Elder Sun.

"I have been meaning to ask this for a while but... who built the formation around the Profound Blossom Sect?" Xie Wang asked Elder Sun with a serious expression, as he has never seen such a profound and fearsome formation before.

When he first laid eyes on it, he almost couldn't believe his eyes, and when they entered the Sect, it felt like they were entering a different world.

If he were to compare the Profound Blossom Sect's formation with their own formation, it would be like comparing a building made of this world's finest materials to a building made of mud with the Xie Family's formation resembling the latter comparison.

"That would be our Sect Master, Su Yang." Elder Sun responded with a respectful tone, not daring to lie to him.

"What? That young man is responsible for this formation?" Xie Wang expressed a surprised face after hearing that Su Yang was behind the formation's creation.

"I wouldn't dare lie to Your Majesty." Elder Sun said.

"Just call me Senior. I have long passed my title and throne to my son, the current lord." Xie Wang said.

"Did you already know about this formation? Is that why you wanted to come here?" Xie Wang asked Xie Xingfang a moment later.

However, she quickly shook her head and said, "No, it wasn't here during the disciple examination."

"Are you telling me that he had built this massive formation in just a few weeks?! Unbelievable!" Xie Wang mumbled in a shocked voice.

Sometime later, Elder Sun brought them to the Morning Wood Pagoda.

"We are here, esteemed guests. Su Yang should be waiting inside." Elder Sun said to them before leaving them alone.

"Let's go." Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang entered the majestic building a moment later.

"Welcome to the Profound Blossom Sect," Su Yang said to them the moment he saw their faces.

"To what do I owe the pleasure, Your Highness?"

He bowed to Xie Xingfang.

"Please, you can drop the formality, Su Yang. Just call me Xing'er." Xie Xingfang said, and she continued, "And I apologize for the sudden visit, as things have been getting complicated recently."

"Are you in some kind of trouble?" Su Yang asked.

Xie Xingfang nodded at his question.

"Let's sit down and talk about it over some tea," he said before pouring some tea for them.

After they were all seated, Xie Xingfang spoke, "This may be sudden, and I won't blame you for refusing this request, but I would like to stay at the Profound Blossom Sect for some time."

"Oh?" Su Yang raised an eyebrow, and he spoke, "I wouldn't dare to chase away a beauty such as yourself even if it's the last thing I do, and you can stay here for as long as you want, but may I ask why you need to stay here?"

Xie Xingfang nodded and said, "Do you remember when we first met, when you were attacked by an assassin from the Moonlight Blades?"

"I guess," he said.

"The Moonlight Blade's activity has gone up recently, so I am seeking protection here until things calm down just in case. Furthermore, on our way here, we were approached by a single messenger from the Moonlight Blades, who said..."

Xie Xingfang recalled what the messenger said to her to Su Yang.

"So someone from the Holy Central Continent might be arriving in this place very soon, huh? Interesting..." Su Yang mumbled.

"I am ashamed to say this, especially after what happened with the Million Snakes Sect, but I believe I will be safe here even if what that messenger said was true." Xie Xingfang said.

"Are you fine with this?" Su Yang looked at Xie Wang.

"What do you mean?" he asked.

"You basically admitted that the Profound Blossom Sect is much safer than your own home, which implies that... well, you should know the rest."

"After seeing the formation that is protecting this place, even if it'll lower our family's standing, I must admit that the Profound Blossom Sect is definitely a much safer place than the Xie Family's household at this moment. And if the Moonlight Blades really managed to convince an expert from the Heavenly Central Continent to come here, then I cannot say with confidence that I can protect her anymore. Don't worry, we won't ask you to lend us your strength for free. As long as we can afford it, we'll definitely repay this debt." Xie Wang said with a serious expression.

Su Yang smiled and said, "You don't need to be so serious, old man. It's only someone from the Holy Central Continent. Even if their entire continent launches an attack at the Profound Blossom Sect, they won't harm a hair on Xing'er as long as she stays within the formation."

"O-Old man..." The corner of Xie Wang's mouth twitched.

"I cannot thank you enough for this, Su Yang!" Xie Xingfang stood up and bowed to him.

"You can thank me afterward," he shook his head.

Sometime later, Xie Wang spoke with a deep frown on his face, "Now that our main reason for coming here is out of the way, let's talk about the poison that still resides within my granddaughter's body."

### **Chapter 548 Xie Wang's Invitation**

When Xie Wang mentioned the potion within Xie Xingfang's body, the room turned silent.

"The Xie Family has obtained every ingredient you listed except for three — Demon Roots, Purple Qilin's Blood, and the Devil Blood Ginseng."

"Both the Demon Roots and the Purple Qilin can be found within the Abandoned Forest, a highly dangerous place with powerful poisonous beasts that reside inside and a poisonous mist that fills the entire place. Although we have the ability to obtain the Demon Roots that is near the outer areas, we cannot reach the Purple Qilin that dwells within the deepest parts of the Abandoned Forest."

"Unless one has a body with strong immunity to poisons like Xing'er, they will not be able to reach the Purple Qilin, much less obtain its blood. Xing'er could reach the Purple Qilin with her Heavenly Constitution, but she is only at the first level Heavenly Spirit Realm, and the Purple Qilin is at the very least the sixth level Heavenly Spirit Realm."

"As for the Devil Blood Ginseng... how is your progress with it?" Xie Wang asked him.

"Well, it's currently growing in a secluded place, so nobody else will find it, and it should be ready to harvest in a few months," he calmly responded.

"Really? That's great to hear!" Xie Xingfang said.

"Now, regarding the poison within the Abandoned Forest... How strong is the poison there? Can it stop even you from entering it?" Su Yang then asked Xie Wang.

"As much as I hate to admit it, I can only resist the poison before the center area. Any more than that and even my cultivation base won't be able to protect me from the poison mist."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Very well, I will find a way to protect you from the poison mist and fight the Purple Qilin."

"Do you already have a plan?" Xie Wang raised his eyebrows in a surprised manner.

"Of course," he quickly responded. "I have a few pills in mind that will increase your resistance to poison."

"Pills...?" A complicated expression appeared on Xie Wang's face, and he continued, "But there are no pills in this world that are powerful enough to resist the poison mist, or we would have obtained the ingredients long ago."

Su Yang shook his head and said, "If I am not confident of its effects, would I even bother mentioning it? Though, I am not surprised you do not know about it, since it doesn't exist in the Eastern Continent yet."

"W-What...?" Xie Wang looked at him with wide eyes. He suddenly recalled the Goddess during the Regional Tournament.

"Oh! These pills must be from the Holy Central Continent, right?!" he asked with excitement.

"Eh?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"Well, I guess it's something like that," he said a moment later.

While these pill recipes came from the Four Divine Heavens, it would be better to just say that it came from the Holy Central Continent, as that was more convenient and believable.

"This is great news, grandfather!" Xie Xingfang said with a bright smile. "Now we can obtain two more ingredients! Once the Devil Blood Ginseng is ready for harvest, we will have all of the ingredients for the cure!"

"Don't get so excited just yet," Su Yang suddenly said to them. "Although we have resolutions to deal with the poison mist, we still need the pills for the plan to succeed. Just like the cure for Xing'er's poisoned body, I am not sure if the ingredients required for the pills exist in this world."

"Even if we don't have the ingredients in the Eastern Continent, we can get them from the Holy Central Continent, right? Although I have never been there personally, your Master should be able to reach that place, right?" Xie Wang asked him.

"My Master...? If you're talking about that beauty, then she's not my Master." Su Yang sighed, wondering why everyone immediately assumes Qiuyue to be his Master.

"That Goddess who appeared at the end of the Regional Tournament? If she's not your Master, then who is that expert? I have never seen someone as powerful as her in my 500 years in this world." Xie Wang asked with a puzzled face.

"A friend," he casually responded.

"Anyway, even without the pills, I have a few more ideas."

He then turned to look at Xie Xingfang and said, "Can I see your palms for a moment?"

Xie Xingfang nodded and extended her arms to him.

Su Yang grabbed her smooth hand and closed his eyes.

A few minutes of silence later, he reopened his eyes and said, "You have about another half a year before you start experiencing the symptoms, which will be painful to bear."

"Half a year... will that be enough for us to complete the cure?" she asked him with a worried face.

Su Yang showed her a confident smile and said, "Even if that isn't enough time, I will make it so that it will be enough, so you shouldn't worry about it."

"Even though I am from one of the most powerful families in the Eastern Continent, I don't know how I should be thanking you for all that you've done for me and my family." Xie Xingfang sighed.

"There's no need to thank me. I am just doing what I want," he said.

"Anyway, do you have any more questions for me?"

"Do you have anything else for him, Xing'er?" Xie Wang asked her.

"No," she shook her head.

"Then can you wait for me outside? I would like to talk to him in private. It won't take too long." Xie Wang said.

Xie Xingfang looked at him silently for a moment before nodding her head. "Don't go overboard just because I am not here, grandfather, because I will find out."

"I wouldn't dare," he chuckled.

Once Xie Xingfang left the room, Xie Wang looked at Su Yang with a serious expression and said, "I won't beat around the bush and go straight to the topic."

"You... would you like to become a part of the Xie Family?" he asked Su Yang with narrowed eyes.

### **Chapter 549 One-of-a-Kind Woman**

"You want me to join the Xie Family? Would you like to elaborate on that?" Su Yang said calmly.

"It is exactly as it sounds. I want you to join our family and become the next 'Lord Xie' in the future." Xie Wang spoke with a serious expression.

"Can you tell me what made you come to such a decision?" Su Yang asked him.



"It's quite simple, actually. Not only are you one of the most talented individuals I have ever seen but you also have the brains and demeanor to rule an entire Continent. Furthermore, my granddaughter, Xing'er, also seems to fancy you, and you have the appearance and facial features to match her beauty. If you ask me, you are the most suitable for my granddaughter. I have seen countless young men asking for my granddaughter's hand, but none of them qualify to even touch her, much less marry her."

"What do you say? If you join the Xie Family, not only will you get to marry Xing'er, who is arguably the most beautiful woman in the Eastern Continent, but there's a very high chance that you will succeed the throne and rule over the Eastern Continent in the future."

After hearing Xie Wang's words, Su Yang spoke with a smile, "Are you sure that you can trust someone like me? I mean, we are barely acquaintances, so I doubt you know very much about me. And to hand over your granddaughter to someone you don't even know, aren't you being too hasty with your choices? Furthermore, I am the Sect Leader of a Sect that participates in dual cultivation. Do you really think I will stop cultivating even after I marry into the Xie Family? If you are trying to bait me with Xing'er then I suggest you stop before her feelings are hurt."

"..."

Xie Wang remained silent for a long time after listening to Su Yang's words.

A few more moments later, he spoke, "I wouldn't sacrifice Xing'er even if it's the last thing I do. No matter how greedy I am or how much I want the Xie Family to succeed, I won't use my beloved granddaughter as bait. You are thinking too lowly of me, young man."

"However, it is because you have such a mentality that I think you are fit to become a ruler. And I wouldn't even be bringing this up if Xing'er didn't fancy you. She has a talent for judging people, and if she approves of you, then I have no reason to doubt your character even if I don't know you that well."

"Furthermore, you are the only individual I know that can look at Xing'er in the face without showing any lust in your eyes."

"What do you say, young man? My granddaughter is a one-of-a-kind woman in this world. Not only is she as beautiful as a fairy but her talent is also top-notch, and she's royalty. If I allow it, there would be men lining up from one side of the Continent to the other side for her."

Su Yang chuckled at his words. While Xie Xingfang may be the most beautiful woman in this world, he has seen countless women that surpasses her talent and beauty in the Four Divine Heaven and have even cuddled with many of them.

"I'm sorry, but I will have to decline your offer despite all your praises." Su Yang said a moment later, dumbfounding Xie Wang.

"Can I ask you why?" Xie Wang asked him. "In terms of status and appearance, there's nobody in this world that can compare to her. And if you include her talent and gentle character, she's definitely a top choice for any man."

"Indeed, Xing'er appearance is quite the feast for one's eyes, and her background is as impressive. However, I can tell that she's the type of woman who cannot bear to share her man." Su Yang spoke

calmly. "Even if she remains silent and won't complain about it, she will still feel pain inwardly, and as a man who cannot remain faithful to one woman, I cannot be with her."

"However, with that being said, that is not the only reason why I cannot join the Xie Family."

He continued, "The Eastern Continent is simply too small for me, and I do not plan on staying here forever. Once I get the chance, I will be leaving the Eastern Continent to explore the world, so I cannot become a ruler for the Eastern Continent."

"You..." Xie Wang was speechless, as he truly did not know how to respond to Su Yang's words.

And regarding Xie Xingfang, he also had a feeling that she would rather have a healthy relationship with her significant other, and Su Yang's life as a dual cultivator will definitely put a heavy burden on her.

"Is my reasoning acceptable for you? Or should I give you a few more? If the circumstances were different, then I would not have hesitated to join the Xie Family, but alas..." Su Yang said to him.

"Haaa..." Xie Wang sighed, and he spoke, "No, you don't have to say anymore. I understand your feelings and reason very well. I'm sorry if I had placed you in an awkward spot with my request just now."

'It's truly a pity. If the Eastern Continent had someone like him ruling it, it would surely prosper into a new era.' Xie Wang inwardly shook his head.

"Anyway, I would like to personally thank you for allowing Xing'er to stay here. If you don't mind, I will also remain for a few days before I return to the Xie Family."

"It's fine, really." Su Yang smiled.

"Here's a little something in return for your hospitality." Xie Wang suddenly handed him a storage ring. "You can use it for yourself or share it with the Profound Blossom Sect."

Su Yang accepted the storage ring without even bothering to look inside.

Sometime later, they left the building to meet up with Xie Xingfang, who was patiently waiting outside.

"I hope my grandfather did not bother you too much, Su Yang." Xie Xingfang said to him afterward.

He shook his head and said, "It wasn't too bad."

"So you are saying that I had bothered you a little?" Xie Wang raised his eyebrows.

"Hahaha..." Su Yang casually laughed it off.

### **Chapter 550 A Selfish Woman**

After their small meeting at the Morning Wood Pagoda, Su Yang brought the Xie Family to the best living quarters within the Profound Blossom Sect.

"This will be your living quarter until you decide to leave, but if it's not to your liking, we can always change it, since the Sect is quite spacious and has a lot of room as of this moment. It's quite close to the Yin Yang Pavilion, where I am currently staying, and if you need anything, you can just contact me using

this communication jade slip." Su Yang said to them before returning to the Yin Yang Pavilion a few minutes later.

Once they entered their new living quarters, Xie Wang asked Xie Xingfang, "My granddaughter, how do you feel about Su Yang?"

"What's with the sudden question, grandfather? And I respect Su Yang very much. Not only is he very talented but he's also a very kind individual," she calmly responded.

"Aiya... that's not what I am asking, but you should already know that. There's no need to be so reserved in front of this old man because I will support you no matter what. Therefore, tell me what you think of Su Yang as a man. Would you mind taking him as your husband?"

"..."

Xie Xingfang closed her eyes and remained silent for a good minute before speaking, "Su Yang... he's what most women would call the perfect man. He's extremely handsome, highly talented, profoundly knowledgeable, and most importantly, a caring individual. All in all, he's an extraordinary individual... almost too perfect if I am being honest."

"I won't mention his methods of cultivation, as I believe that he's only doing what he enjoys, albeit it might be a bit eccentric."

"However, the thing that interests me the most is his demeanor, how he always remains so elegant and noble-like. Among the countless men that have looked at me, he's the only one who doesn't look at me with lustful eyes and filthy thoughts, and he's even looked at me directly in the eyes without a veil covering my face. Furthermore, I can tell that he's not faking it and is genuinely not fazed by my appearance."

"If someone like Su Yang is willing to accept me as his Dao Companion, I would not hesitate to become his woman, as I am confident that he will make me the happiest woman in this world."

"However, with all that being said, the possibility of us being together is highly unlikely mainly because of the fact that I am a selfish woman. Although I might be fine now, if we actually become Dao Companions, I do not think I will be able to bear seeing him being passionate with other women."

"Perhaps this is due to my background and how I was raised, but I simply do not wish to share him with others." Xie Xingfang sighed at the end.

"..."

Xie Wang was speechless, as Su Yang had said the exact same thing to him just some time ago.

'He was right on the mark... It appears that he knows more about Xing'er than myself despite barely spending time with each other...' He thought to himself, silently admiring Su Yang's ability to assess women.

"What a pity..." he sighed a moment later. "If Su Yang becomes a part of the Xie Family, our influence will surely spread to the other three Continents, not to mention he is also acquainted with someone from the Holy Central Continent. However, if you cannot bear seeing him with other women, then you

can only give up or make him adore you to the point where he is willing to abandon the other women, but that is highly unlikely."

"I'm sorry, grandfather, for disappointing you." Xie Xingfang said.

"If anyone should apologize, it should be me. Don't let this conversation pressure you, as I was only curious about your feelings." Xie Wang said before going to his own living quarters a few minutes later.

Once Xie Xingfang was alone, she sighed. "If only I could be more open-minded..."

Meanwhile, inside the Yin Yang Pavilion, Liu Lanzhi approached Su Yang and asked him, "Is everything okay? What happened to the Xie Family?"

"They will be staying with us for some time due to some complications," he said.

"What? They are going to be staying in the Sect? Do you know how long this will last? I cannot cultivate with a peaceful mind knowing that the Xie Family could be watching!"

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Calm down for a moment. Why would they be peeking at our Cultivation? As long as you don't bother them, they won't bother you."

"Anyway, I have to leave the Sect for a few days in a few weeks, as I have business at the Burning Lotus Sect. Though, if you need anything, just contact me through the communication jade slip as usual."

While they were in a conversation, Bai Lihua suddenly showed up with a panicked expression. "Is it true that the Xie Family is here?! And even the Ancestor is here?! Tell me where they are so I can greet them!" she said to them.

Su Yang nodded and gave her the location of their living quarters.

"Su Yin! Are you in there? Come with me to greet the Xie Family!" Bai Lihua called out to Su Yin, who was still sleeping in the room.

A few moments later, a drowsy-looking Su Yin appeared.

"Hurry up and fix your appearance. If you greet the Ancestor whilst looking like that, that would spell the end for the Heavenly Swan Sect!" Bai Lihua said to her.

"You are exaggerating..." Su Yang smiled.

A few minutes later, after Su Yin fixed her appearance, Bai Lihua dragged her to the Xie Family.

"Sect Leader of Heavenly Swan Sect, Bai Lihua, greets the Ancestor and Your Highness!"

"Su Yin from the Su Family and Heavenly Swan Sect greets the Ancestor and Your Highness."

They bowed to them with the utmost respect.

"Oh? What's the Heavenly Swan Sect doing at the Profound Blossom Sect?" Xie Wang raised his eyebrows in interest.

"It was my disciple, Su Yin's coming of age, and she wanted to celebrate it with her Elder Brother, Su Yang, so we arrived here a few days ago." Bai Lihua explained their reason for their presence at the Profound Blossom Sect.

"So it's like that. Anyway, you can drop the formalities, as we are also guests at the Profound Blossom Sect." Xie Xingfang said to them with a gentle smile.

### **Chapter 551 Surname Fang**

"Su Yin... you are Su Yang's little sister, right? I have been wanting to speak with you for a while now." Xie Xingfang suddenly looked at her with a smile.

"Me...?" Su Yin showed a dazed expression.

Xie Xingfang nodded and spoke, "If you have some time now, would you mind sitting down with me? I will serve you some of my family's finest tea in exchange for your time."

"Tea with Your Highness?" Su Yin was dumbfounded, as she was just given a massive opportunity that would normally never happen. However, she could not imagine why Xie Xingfang would be interested in her.

While she's from one of the Four Great Families, she hasn't done anything that would warrant this kind of attention, so this must not be about her but Su Yang instead.

"You don't want to?" Xie Xingfang showed a disheartened expression when Su Yin remained silent.

"N-No! I would be honored to have tea with Your Highness," she said.

"As I'd just said, you can drop the formalities, as we are the only ones here. Just call me Sister Xingfang."

"I wouldn't dare..." Su Yin shook her head nervously.

"That would make things complicated for me, since I am very close with your Elder Brother, after all."

"You're close with my Elder Brother? Su Yin looked at her with wide eyes, and she asked, "How close are we talking about?"

"Su Yin... you shouldn't ask such rude questions..." Bai Lihua said to her with a nervous expression.

Xie Xingfang chuckled and said, "If you want to know, I'll tell you everything if you come with me."

"Okay, Sister Xingfang!" Su Yin immediately agreed, and her attitude towards Xie Xingfang did a 180.

"I'll apologize in advance if my disciple behaves rudely, Your Highness..." Bai Lihua said to her before they left.

Once they left, Xie Wang looked at Bai Lihua and said, "The Heavenly Swan Sect has formed an Alliance with the Profound Blossom Sect, right? And this is before they even won the Regional Tournament. If you don't mind, can you tell me what caused you to come to such a decision? I don't mean to be rude, but an Elite Sect would normally not even notice a place as small and insignificant as the Profound Blossom Sect, yet you tossed away all your pride and formed an alliance with them? I cannot imagine what would influence you to do such a thing."

"Well... that is..." Bai Lihua showed a perplexed expression. It wouldn't be wise for her to reveal the details behind their Alliance, but she was standing before the Xie Family's Ancestor, who is even more terrifying and powerful than the current Lord Xie.

Heaven knows what might happen if she lies to his face and he finds out.

"Hmm... if it's too difficult for you to answer my question, you can ignore it." Xie Wang suddenly said. "I'm sure Su Yang must have offered you something that you cannot refuse, right? If that's the case, then I will not pry any further."

After saying those words, Xie Wang returned to his living quarters.

Meanwhile, inside Xie Xingfang's room, she poured Su Yin a cup of tea.

'Her Highness from the Xie Family is pouring me tea...' Su Yin realized just how weird her situation was, as it would normally be the other way around.

"This tea is called the Soul Cleansing Green Tea, and it's made of poisonous leaves from the Abandoned Forest. Of course, the poison has already been extracted from the leaves, so you don't have to worry about being poisoned, and it's also one of my favorites."

"T-Thank you, Sister Xingfang." Su Yin said to her before sipping on the tea that had a deep green color.

"Mmm! It's sweet! I have never tasted such delicious tea before!" Su Yin expressed surprise a moment later.

"I'm glad it suits your taste, Junior Sister." Xie Xingfang smiled.

A few minutes later, once they finished the tea, Su Yin asked Xie Xingfang, "Sister Xingfang, what's your relationship with my Elder Brother?"

"Where should I begin..."

Xie Xingfang then began recalling to Su Yin her first meeting with Su Yang.

"Even though I have never seen him before, and before I knew of his identity, it only took a single glance for me to recognize his extraordinary existence." Xie Xingfang said with a smile as she remembered how Su Yang nonchalantly handed her an Immortal-grade technique that directly benefited her Heavenly Constitution.

"I have received a lot of assistance from him since then, so I owe him a lot. However, despite my status, I find it very difficult repaying him, as I feel like no matter what I give him, it would be akin to trash in his eyes."

A few minutes later, Xie Xingfang said to her, "Now that you know about my relationship with Su Yang, why don't you tell me more about him? I would love to know more about my benefactor, after all."

Thus, Su Yin and Xie Xingfang began chatting with each other with the majority of their topics being related to Su Yang.

Many hours later, Su Yin left the place and returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion.

"So Su Yang wasn't always like this, huh. It seems like something major had happened to him after he left the Su Family that caused such changes." Xie Xingfang mumbled to herself afterward.

After listening to Su Yin talk about Su Yang, she thought that her understanding of him would become clearer, but little did she expect that it would actually be the opposite.

"Just who are you really, Su Yang?" Xie Xingfang sighed.

Meanwhile, a few miles away from the Profound Blossom Sect, multiple luxurious carriages could be seen approaching the Sect's direction, and each of these carriages were carrying a large flag with the surname 'Fang' elegantly sewed on it.

"Matriarch Fang, we are almost at the Profound Blossom Sect." The carriage driver said to the individual inside the carriage he was managing.

"Very well..." A cold and distant voice resounded a moment later.

### **Chapter 552 The Fang Family**

After traveling for half an hour, the carriages finally arrived at the Profound Blossom Sect's entrance gates.

"We have arrived at the Profound Blossom Sect, Matriarch," said the carriage driver.

A few moments later, a stunning middle-aged woman wearing luxurious clothes walked out of the carriage, followed by a graceful young lady who appeared to be in her early twenties and her body emitting the power of the 1st level Earth Spirit Realm.

"So this is where she has been hiding for the past ten years, huh? It's much cleaner than I'd expected." The young lady spoke in a nonchalant voice.

Meanwhile, when the Sect Elder standing by the entrance noticed their carriages stop right in front of their gates, she approached them and said, "Who are you? And what business do you have with the Profound Blossom Sect?"

The middle-aged lady stepped forward and said, "We are from the Fang Family, and I am the Matriarch, Fang Xianjue."

"One of the Four Great Families, that Fang Family?!" The Sect Elder asked for confirmation, her face filled with shock.

Fang Xianjue nodded, and she continued, "We have decided to come here after hearing that someone by the name of Fang Zhelan is currently a disciple here, am I right?"

"Fang Zhelan? Yes, there is indeed a disciple with that name here." The Sect Elder nodded.

"That's great, because she is actually a member of the Fang Family, and she's my daughter. It's been ten years since she disappeared from the family, but I finally have a chance to see her again and bring her home," said Fang Xianjie.

"What?! She's from the Fang Family, and you are her mother?! That's not possible because her parents are already deceased. I'm afraid that you might have gotten the wrong person with a similar name..."

Fang Xianjue calmly shook her head and said, "I have already investigated her background, so I am confident that she's my daughter. If you let me see her, I will be certain."

"Please wait a moment and let me notify the Sect Masters and Fang Zhelan." The Sect Elder said before retrieving her communication jade slip and explaining the situation to Liu Lanzhi.

Meanwhile, in the Yin Yang Pavilion, after receiving the Sect Elder's message, Liu Lanzhi went to get Su Yang.

"The Fang Family is here? And they are claiming that Fang Zhelan is with them?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"I don't know what's happening, but Fang Zhelan told me that her parents had died before she came to the Sect, so either she lied or the Fang Family mistook her for someone from their family." Liu Lanzhi said.

"Either way, let's get Fang Zhelan and meet with the Fang Family."

A few minutes later, Fang Zhelan appeared at the Yin Yang Pavilion after being summoned, but she was unaware of the situation.

"Disciple Fang... you told me that your parents had died before you joined the Sect, right?" Liu Lanzhi asked her afterward.

Fang Zhelan made a puzzled expression, but she nodded a few moments later, "That's right, Sect Master."

Liu Lanzhi looked at her with a serious expression and said, "Well... one of the Four Great Families from the Western Region, the Fang Family is currently here, and they are claiming that you are one of them."

"Wha—?!"

A shocked expression immediately appeared on Fang Zhelan's face after hearing this news.

Seeing the complicated emotions in her eyes, Liu Lanzhi spoke, "I don't know the circumstances behind any of this, but we cannot keep the Fang Family waiting forever. Whether they are right or mistaken, we will know once you meet them."

Fang Zhelan bit her lips and spoke in a low voice, "There's no need for that, Sect Leader. They are right, and I am indeed from the Fang Family. I am sorry for lying to you and hiding this fact, but I have my own reasons for doing so..."

Liu Lanzhi sighed after hearing her words and said, "I had a feeling this would be the case. However, I doubt the Fang Family will leave without meeting you. No matter your reason, they are here for you now, and you cannot run away forever."

"But..."

Fang Zhelan's eyes narrowed, and her aura emitted reluctance. It was obvious that she did not wish to meet the Fang Family, but there was nothing Liu Lanzhi could do, as they couldn't simply just send one of the Four Great Families away by force.



"Haa..." Su Yang suddenly sighed, and he spoke as he grabbed Fang Zhelan's trembling hands, "What are you afraid of? I will also be there with you."

"Su Yang..." Fang Zhelan looked at him with teary eyes.

"I don't care about your circumstances, nor do I care about your reason for lying, as everyone has a thing or two they do not wish to reveal to the public. However, no matter what happens, I will be on your side."

After hearing his words, Fang Zhelan nodded, "Okay... I will meet with the Fang Family. However, before we meet them, I want you to know about our circumstances."

And she began revealing to them the truth about her background.

"It is true that I used to belong to the Fang Family. However, when they realized that I had no talent in cultivation, they decided to sell me to another family, as only my appearance was worth anything in such a powerful and influential family. Of course, I did not want to spend the rest of my life as a plaything for some Young Master, so I ran away from the family right before my coming of age."

"After leaving the family, I decided to join the Profound Blossom Sect, where I could freely choose my own partners."

"I had no idea that you had such a story..." Liu Lanzhi showed a shocked expression after hearing her story.

"But how could they say you have no talent? You were and still is one of the most talented disciples we have!" Liu Lanzhi said while shaking her head, thinking that the Fang Family must have misjudged her talent.

### **Chapter 553 Fang Zhelan's Real Background**

"Aren't you missing some logic in your words just now?" Su Yang said to Liu Lanzhi, who raised her eyebrows in a confused manner.

"The Profound Blossom Sect may be very powerful now, but that was not always the case. Even if she's one of the most talented disciples in the Profound Blossom Sect, she is only a disciple of a small Sect."

"Compared to the Fang Family, one of the most powerful families on the entire Eastern Continent, even their least talented individuals could become top geniuses in the Profound Blossom Sect without much effort."

"Su Yang is right, Sect Master." Fang Zhelan said with a bitter smile. "I may be considered a genius here, but I am nothing in the Fang Family."

"Even if that's the case, you should not lose to even the most talented individual within the Fang Family now." Liu Lanzhi said.

"That's probably the main reason why the Fang Family is looking for me in the first place. Now that I am considered to be one of the most talented individuals in the Eastern Continent, they want me to return to the Fang Family to boost their reputation and whatnot." Fang Zhelan sighed.

"If that's the case, what are you going to do?" Liu Lanzhi asked her.

"What? I'm going to refuse, of course. I have survived for over ten years without their help so why would I need their help now?" she coldly snorted, feeling disgust just thinking about returning to the Fang Family.

Liu Lanzhi nodded with a slight smile on her face, and she spoke, "I see... Anyway, the Fang Family will most likely refuse to leave if you don't tell them your words just now straight to their faces."

Sometime later, Fang Zhelan and the Sect Masters went to meet with the Fang Family.

In the guests' lobby, where the Fang Family was getting impatient, the door suddenly opened, and Fang Zhelan calmly walked into the room, followed by Su Yang and Liu Lanzhi.

When Fang Xianjue saw Fang Zhelan's face, she quickly stood up and approached Fang Zhelan with her arms spread and her face beaming with delight, "Oh! Fang Zhelan! It's really you! Do you still recognize your own mother? I have been dying to see you again after you went missing ten years ago!"

However, Fang Zhelan took a few steps back and avoided her mother's embrace.

"My daughter...?" Fang Xianjue looked at her with a surprised expression, seemingly in disbelief.

Fang Zhelan narrowed her eyes and spoke, "I remember you very well, Mother. However, I also remember everything that had happened when I was in the Fang Family, how you all treated me with disgust, like I didn't belong there, especially you, hence why I left in the first place."

"If you think you can get me to return to the Fang Family, then you are sorely mistaken, as I have a new family now at the Profound Blossom Sect."

"Furthermore, your acting like you never knew about my location for the past ten years is quite bad. With the Fang Family's influence and resources, I'm sure you knew about my presence here the entire time. The only reason you didn't come get me sooner was simply because I have become a Dual Cultivator, making my body, the only thing worth a thing in your eyes, completely worthless."

"..."

Fang Xianjue's face flushed with redness, and her body trembled from anger after hearing Fang Zhelan's words.

"How ungrateful!" she suddenly exploded, causing her beautiful face to twist until it looked ugly, "To think you would spit on the hands that fed you for more than half of your life despite giving us nothing worthy in return! Just because you have gained some reputation and strength now does make you invincible, Fang Zhelan! If I truly wanted to ruin your life, even the Profound Blossom Sect cannot protect you!"

"..."

The entire room became speechless for a good moment until Liu Lanzhi stepped forward and spoke with a frown on her face, "Senior Fang, your words just now... can I interpret that the Fang Family is threatening the Profound Blossom Sect?"

Fang Xianjue immediately turned to look at her and shouted, "Who the hell do you think you are?! Just because the Profound Blossom Sect received some recognition after the Regional Tournament, it does not immediately put you on the level of the Four Great Families that have had more reputation for hundreds of years!"

"This is why I despise people like you, who become blinded by arrogance after receiving the smallest recognition!"

"..."

The place turned quiet again, and Liu Lanzhi stood there with a dazed face, as this is her first time dealing with someone as aggressive and unreasonable as Fang Xianjue.

"Xiaoru, you should say something to your worthless Elder Sister, too!" Fang Xianjue said to her.

However, when no response came back after many moments, Fang Xianjue turned around to look at her and said, "Why are you being so quiet? If you don't let these arrogant people know their places, this world will quickly become an unbearable place!"

"Xiaoru...?"

When she saw the dazed expression on Fang Xiaoru's face, almost like she was enchanted by something, Fang Xianjue's eyes widened with shock, as she has never witnessed Fang Xiaoru making such an expression before.

She then followed the general direction of Fang Xiaoru's gaze and finally noticed Su Yang, who was calmly standing by the entrance.

"You are... Su Yang from the Su Family..." Fang Xianjue frowned.

"What did you do to my daughter?" she asked him in a cold voice.

"Hm? What are you talking about? I have been standing here and minding my own business the entire time." Su Yang shrugged with a puzzled face.

"Bullshit! You clearly did something to my daughter, or else she wouldn't have such a bewitched expression on her face!" she quickly slammed the table before her, causing the place to tremble.

"M-Mother!" Fang Xiaoru finally woke up from her daze after feeling the trembling.

"What were you saying just now? I was kind of occupied for a moment..." she asked while she continued to glance at Su Yang with the corner of her eyes, almost as though she was attracted by some kind of unknown force emitted by him.

"..."

The place turned silent, and everybody in the room was looking at her with wide eyes.

### **Chapter 554 Fang Zhelan's Dilemma**

Ever since Su Yang entered the room, Fang Xiaoru could not help but stare at him as though she was mesmerized by some kind of seduction technique.

While she has heard rumors of his appearance, she didn't think he would turn out to be this handsome.

Fang Xiaoru herself was the type to always look down on others, and she rarely acknowledges even people much older than her, much less those around her age.

However, it only took a quick glance at Su Yang's aura and demeanor for her to recognize his abilities and quality.

And in her twenty years of living in this world, she has never seen anyone like him before, and she has met with a lot of geniuses from the top families and Sects in this world, but nobody could compare to Su Yang's overwhelming presence.

If only she could follow someone like him for the rest of her life, she would not have a single complaint for the rest of her life.

"Mother, I have decided." Fang Xiaoru suddenly spoke with a bewitched expression. "I want to join the Profound Blossom Sect."

"You what?!" Fang Xianjue cried out loud, her face filled with bewilderment and shock.

"Absolutely not! Have you lost your mind?! Why would you want to be in this small place?!"

"You wouldn't understand it even if I explained it to you, Mother." Fang Xiaoru shook her head.

"You...!" Fang Xianjue's entire face fumed with redness.

"Fang Xiaoru wants to join the Profound Blossom Sect...?" Fang Zhelan looked at her with a dazed face, almost as though she couldn't believe her ears.

Even Liu Lanzhi couldn't help but stand there with a dumbfounded expression. Fang Xiaoru is without a doubt one of the most talented individuals on this Continent, and if she were to join the Profound Blossom Sect, their reputation would surely rise to a new height.

However, Su Yang's voice suddenly resounded, "I'm glad that you are interested in the Profound Blossom Sect, but the disciple examination is already over. If you wish to join us, you must wait until next year and pass the exam."

"..."

Everybody in the room turned to look at him with wide eyes and mouths. While Fang Xiaoru wanting to join the Profound Blossom Sect was shocking, Su Yang refusing such a talented person into their Sect was even more shocking.

"You can't make an exception for me?" Fang Xiaoru asked him in a pleading voice whilst making a disheartened face.

"Regardless of your status, rules are rules. If I allow someone to enter so easily, then the disciples that have taken the examination will feel unjust." Su Yang shook his head, remaining adamant on his decision.

"Then it'll be fine if I also take the examination? I will even compensate you for the trouble." Fang Xiaoru was also adamant about joining the Profound Blossom Sect.

And she continued, "How about my body? I will give you my body in return for allowing me to take the examination. If I fail, I will still give you my body, and I will also give up on joining the Profound Blossom Sect. My body is still pure if that's what you are wondering."

"Xiaoru! Have you gone insane, offering your chastity for something stupid like this?! There are countless others Sects out there that would beg to have you in their Sect, and even the Elite Sects would not dare to chase you away! Why must you lower in such a way?!" Fang Xianjue, her mother, quickly interrupted.

However, Fang Xiaoru remained silent, her gaze staring directly at Su Yang's eyes.

Su Yang showed a smile on his face a moment later, and he spoke, "I must admit, your determination is admirable. How about this? I will let her decide."

He suddenly pointed at Fang Zhelan, who immediately jumped.

"Ah?! You want me to...?!" she asked while pointing at herself.

Su Yang nodded, "After all, not only are you a Sect Elder but she is also your Junior Sister. There are times when Sect Masters have to rely on the Sect Elders."

After Su Yang handed the privilege to decide Fang Xiaoru's fate to Fang Zhelan, everybody in the room turned to look at her.

"Don't you dare allow her into the Sect, Fang Zhelan!" Her Mother suddenly shouted at her. "I swear that I will do everything in my power to ruin this place if you allow her into the Sect and ruin her future!"

Meanwhile, Fang Xiaoru approached her and lowered her body until she was kowtowing to Fang Zhelan.

"Please, Elder Sister. If you let me in the Sect, I will do anything you want me to," she pleaded, shocking Fang Zhelan.

Fang Zhelan took a deep breath and closed her eyes to ponder.

'When the entire Fang Family mocked me for being useless, she was the only one who didn't bully me. Perhaps it's because I am simply too insignificant in her eyes to be bothered, but I was truly grateful that my younger sister did not mock me, as my life within the family would've been even more miserable.'

'And as her Elder Sister, even if I am no longer in the family, I should at least listen to her, and if joining the Profound Blossom Sect will make her happy, I shouldn't take that away from her.'

Fang Zhelan opened her eyes and looked at her mother, who was so angry that she was trembling nonstop.

'Since she's so desperate and unwilling to allow Fang Xiaoru to join the Sect, she'll definitely become infuriated if I give Fang Xiaoru the chance, allowing me to get some revenge for being mistreated in the past. But if she truly intends to harm the Profound Blossom Sect afterward...'

Fang Zhelan was feeling extremely perplexed. On one hand, she wanted to be a kind Elder Sister to Fang Xiaoru and allow her to join the Sect and get revenge on Fang Xianjue at the same time, but on the other hand, she doesn't want to cause more trouble for the Profound Blossom Sect with the Fang Family

targeting the Sect because of her decision, as she has already caused massive trouble for the Profound Blossom Sect once with Xiao Bai, nearly causing their downfall.

### **Chapter 555 Family Dispute**

After many moments of silence and pondering, Fang Zhelan finally turned to look at Su Yang with a troubled gaze, clearly asking him for help.

However, Su Yang merely smiled and said, "No matter your decision, I will support it."

"I swear to God, Fang Zhelan! If you don't choose wisely, not only you, but the entire Profound Blossom Sect will feel the Fang Family's wrath!" Fang Xianjue shouted.

Hearing her words, Fang Zhelan trembled.

"If you think we are scared of the Fang Family, then you can go ahead and try to mess with us!" Liu Lanzhi unexpectedly raised her voice, causing everyone there to look at her with wide eyes.

"Although you may have immense influence and a powerful background, the Profound Blossom Sect is no longer the weak and small Sect that it used to be! Not only did we win the Regional Tournament, but we also have the support of two Elite Sects! If you think that you can bully us, then we will fight back with everything that we've got!"

Despite her vicious words and serious expression, Liu Lanzhi's heart was trembling from fear, as she could've never imagined that she would dare talk back to the Matriarch of the Fang Family, one of the Four Great Families that govern the Eastern Continent.

"How dare you, a lowly Sect Master speak to me in such a manner!" Fang Xianjue roared, causing the place to tremble.

However, she was quickly interrupted by Su Yang's sudden laughter.

"Hahaha! Well said, Sect Leader! Now you are finally starting to act like someone with power!"

He approached Fang Xianjue and continued, "Is being the Four Great Families really as great as you make it out to be? You sure talk big for someone only at the peak of the Earth Spirit Realm, Matriarch Fang. And if you think the Fang Family could possibly threaten the Profound Blossom Sect, then I welcome you to try."

"You, who has the surname Su, is this the Su Family declaring war against my Fang Family? Although the Su Family has been the number one family amongst the Four Great Families for the last few decades, everyone can see that they are no longer as powerful as it used to be."

Hearing Fang Xianjue's words, Su Yang merely smiled and said, "I have nothing to do with the Su Family. After all, I was abandoned by them just like Fang Zhelan was abandoned by the Fang Family. However, unlike the Fang Family, at least the Su Family did not shamelessly approach me and act like our grievances never existed when they realized my talents."

"You—!"

Just as Fang Xianjue was about to explode from anger, Fang Zhelan interrupted, "I have finally decided, Su Yang."

She then turned to look at her younger sister, Fang Xiaoru, who has not lifted her head this entire time, and spoke, "You are very talented, Xiaoru — much more talented than I will ever be, and that talent caused you to look down on everyone who's not as talented as you. However, I do not blame you, as that's how we were raised by our parents."

"While your reason for wanting to join the Sect is questionable, I can tell that your feelings are genuine, and as a disciple of the Sect and your Elder Sister, it would go against everything I was taught here to ignore your passion. Therefore, I have decided to let you partake in the disciple examination. If you pass, then you will be allowed to become a disciple. However, if you fail..."

Fang Zhelan did not finish her sentence, as it was obvious what she was going to say.

"Thank you, Elder Sister! Even if I fail, I will never forget your generosity today!" Fang Xiaoru said to her.

"Fang Zhelan, you little whore!" Fang Xianjue could no longer control her emotions and finally exploded in anger, preparing to jump at Fang Zhelan.

However, before she could move, a powerful and profound force appeared out of thin air and restricted her movements.

"Who dares to restrict my movements?!" she cried out loud.

A clear and old voice resounded a moment later, "I did not plan on getting involved in your family dispute and would've rather remained a spectator, but your actions today have greatly disappointed me, Matriarch Fang."

"T-This voice is... Impossible!" Fang Xianjue trembled in fear upon realizing the identity of this voice.

'W-What is the Xie Family's Ancestor doing here?!' she cried inwardly.

And as much as Fang Xianjue wanted to kowtow and apologize to Xie Wang, because of the restrictions on her body, she was unable to move even a muscle.

Xie Wang's voice resounded again, "I honestly don't care if the Fang Family wants to fight with the Su Family or the Profound Blossom Sect, but you know how much I hate nearby commotions when I am trying to relax. Therefore, I am going to ask you nicely to leave things as they are, withdraw for the time being, and continue your family dispute another time."

After his sentence ended, the restriction of Fang Xianjue's body was also removed.

"Although it was never my intent, I apologize for disturbing the Ancestor's peace." Fang Xianjue bowed to the air before looking at the people that followed her.

"We are leaving!" she said to them.

However, before leaving, she turned to look at Fang Xiaoru and said, "I will give you seven days to appear at the Azure Cloud Sect! If you do not show up, you can follow your Elder Sister's steps and act as though your parents have died!"

"As much as I hate to lose a talented daughter like you, I also have no use for a disobedient daughter! I won't lie and say that losing you won't greatly hurt the Fang Family, but we have no shortage of geniuses! If you leave the family, then all of your cultivation resources will go to someone else! Hmph!"

Fang Xianjue coldly snorted before disappearing from their sight.

### **Chapter 556 Fang Xiaoru's Examination**

"Are you sure it's okay for you to be doing this?" Fang Zhelan asked Fang Xiaoru after their mother left the place. "I only left the family because of their neglect and bullying, but you are a different story. Being one of the top geniuses within the family, you are throwing away something most people in this world would kill to obtain."

"It's fine," she calmly responded. "There is no longer anything I can learn from them, and I never liked the atmosphere there anyway."

"By the way, when can I take the disciple examination?" she then asked.

"We can do it right now," said Su Yang.

Sometime later, Su Yang brought Fang Xiaoru to the examination area with Fang Zhelan and Liu Lanzhi watching in the background.

"Do you think she'll pass?" Fang Zhelan asked Liu Lanzhi.

"As the genius of the Fang Family, her talent is definitely the real deal, but I cannot say for certain that she'll pass the exam, as the most challenging test for her in this exam would be the Demon Heart Pill exam, which does not care for one's talent but their Dao Heart instead."

Meanwhile, on the first stage, Fang Xiaoru touched the Bone Age Totem and the Spiritual Totem.

"Twenty-one years old, 1st level Earth Spirit Realm."

After passing the first exam, she walked to the second stage.

Once she was prepared, Su Yang crushed the Demon Heart Pill.

"..."

Fang Zhelan watched nervously as Fang Xiaoru sat in the middle of the red mist.

Five seconds passed without any issues.

Ten seconds later, Fang Xiaoru's body began to tremble.

On the twentieth second mark, a line of blood dripped from her nose.

"This is..." Fang Zhelan showed a worried expression.

If Fang Xiaoru fails the examination, she would have no choice but to return to the Fang Family. But after what happened today, who knows what their mother might do to her if she returns.

Twenty-five seconds into the exam, both of her nostrils were running with blood.



However, Fang Xiaoru did not give up, and Su Yang also did not try to stop her.

Twenty-six seconds... twenty-seven... twenty-eight... twenty-nine seconds...

Right as the timer hit the thirty seconds mark, Su Yang waved his sleeves, causing the red mist to instantly disperse.

\*Cough\*

Fang Xiaoru coughed up a mouthful of blood immediately afterward.

"Did... did I pass the exam?" she asked him in an exhausted voice.

"Yes, you did." Su Yang nodded, and he continued, "However, you barely passed. If you had to endure it for another second or two, you would've died."

A few moments later, Fang Xiaoru went on the third stage and mixed some of the blood on her lips into the bowl of water, and everyone there watched as the pure water turned deep red.

"Congratulations, you have passed the third exam, and now you get to fight me. With that being said, I won't fight an injured woman, even if it's just a friendly spar, so I will give you some time to recover your strength before we spar." Su Yang said before tossing her a few spirit stones.

Fang Xiaoru accepted the spirit stones and immediately started absorbing the spiritual energy within the spirit stones to recover her strength.

While Fang Xiaoru recovered her strength, Fang Zhelan approached him and asked, "Since she passed all three examinations, does this make her a disciple of the Profound Blossom Sect?"

Su Yang nodded and said, "Not only is she incredibly talented, but she also has the determination. While her Dao Heart needs some work, once she is properly trained, she'll without doubt become a powerful figure in this world. Even without the Profound Blossom Sect, she could reach the level of Lord Xie."

"She's that talented?" Fang Zhelan looked at him with wide eyes, as Su Yang rarely gives out such high praises to anyone.

He nodded and said, "Out of all of the disciples in this Sect, only Yan Yan is above her in terms of talent. The Fang Family probably doesn't know the true extent of her talents, or else they wouldn't have given up on her so easily."

Sometime later, once Fang Xiaoru finished recovering her strength, she approached the fourth stage.

"I won't move until you attack me first." Su Yang said to her. "And there's no need to hold back. Hit me with everything you've got."

Fang Xiaoru nodded, and she began to accumulate her spiritual energy in one area — her right hand.

"T-That's...!" Fang Zhelan immediately recognized this technique and expressed surprise.

"What kind of technique is that?" Liu Lanzhi asked her out of curiosity.

"That's the 'Sublime Mountain Fist', Fang Family's hereditary technique, and it's one of their strongest one. Rumors say it has the power to destroy an entire mountain with a single punch if practiced to

perfection. If the Fang Family allowed her to learn that technique, they must've really treasured her talent," she explained.

"Using your strongest technique as your first attack, at least you have some sense." Su Yang said with a calm smile on his face.

A few moments later, Fang Xiaoru rushed at Su Yang with her fists flying towards his face.

An enormous pressure suddenly bore down on Su Yang's body, making it feel as though he was carrying a mountain on his back.

And right as Fang Xiaoru released the energy in her fist, the platform she was standing on shattered into many pieces.

"Haaaaaa!"

Fang Xiaoru shouted loudly as she punched at Su Yang.

Su Yang remained smiling and casually raised his hands to catch Fang Xiaoru's fist with his bare palms.

Boom!

A powerful ripple that was strong enough to push Fang Zhelan and Liu Lanzhi a few steps back was created from the impact, yet Su Yang remained standing in the same spot with a smile on his face.

"No way..." Fang Xiaoru stared at her fist with a dazed look on her face, seemingly in shock that Su Yang managed to stop her martial technique so effortlessly.

### **Chapter 557 A Mere Glance**

After her attack failed, Fang Xiaoru immediately jumped back to distance herself from Su Yang.

However, Su Yang quickly followed her, even throwing his own punch.

"What—?!"

Fang Xiaoru cried out loud when Su Yang's punch emitted the same aura as the Sublime Mountain Fist, but it was much quicker and sharper than her own technique.

Unable to dodge the attack in time, Fang Xiaoru had no other choice but to block the attack with her own body.

"Ahhhh!"

Fang Xiaoru went flying off the stage and far into the distance after barely blocking his attack with her arms.

"Is it just me or did Su Yang use the Fang Family's technique just now?" Liu Lanzhi asked Fang Zhelan with a dumbfounded expression on her face.

"N-No... you saw right. He just used the Sublime Mountain Fist! But how is that possible?! Only a select few from the Fang Family could even see the technique, much less learn it!" Fang Zhelan replied in a shocked voice.

Unless Su Yang somehow sneaked into the Fang Family and secretly learned the martial technique, there was no logical explanation as to how he could've learned the Fang Family's hereditary technique.

Sometime later, Fang Xiaoru returned to the stage with a messy appearance, and she asked him with a confused face, "That was definitely the Sublime Mountain Fist just now... How come you can use a martial technique that only a few from the Fang Family can learn?"

"The Sublime Mountain Fist that you know of is only a small part of a much larger and powerful martial technique. I don't know how the Fang Family obtained it, but it's not as special as you believe it is." Su Yang explained to her.

The technique that he was referring to is a popular and powerful martial technique in the Four Divine Heavens used mostly by Body Cultivators, and the Sublime Mountain Fist is barely the tip of the iceberg in terms of the technique's full prowess.

As for how the Fang Family obtained such a technique, he could only imagine it has something to do with Immortal Han Xin, the unfortunate Heavenly Emperor's lackey who got tossed into this world by accident.

Seeing Fang Xiaoru's dumbfounded expression, Su Yang said, "I can tell that you have great affinity with this technique, so I will give you the full martial technique."

"R-Really? Isn't it something valuable?" she asked him.

After all, if the Fang Family considers a small part of the full technique a priceless treasure, the full martial technique itself would obviously be worth even more.

"Well... even though I said that I will give you the full technique, it's not exactly the 'entire' thing, as you are not capable of understanding it at this moment. Therefore, I will only give you what you can handle for now, and once you become more powerful and knowledgeable, I will give you the real thing."

"Anyway, you have passed the examinations, and you already have what it takes to become a Core Disciple, so I will give you that position. Once you are done with your arrangements, you can come to me to receive the technique."

"Thank you!" she bowed to him despite the pain in her body.

Su Yang nodded and turned to look at Fang Zhelan.

"I will leave her in your hands for now," he said to her.

Sometime later, Fang Zhelan brought Fang Xiaoru to receive her disciple robes and her identity badge.

While they were walking, Fang Xiaoru suddenly asked her, "Elder Sister, have you had sex with Su Yang yet?"

Fang Zhelan nearly tripped on herself after hearing such a question, and she responded in a prideful tone, "Don't make it sound so vulgar. We call that Cultivation here. And yes, I have 'Cultivated' with him before, and many times at that."

"Really? I am envious." Fang Xiaoru said.

"You are jealous of me? Now that's something I didn't expect to hear in this lifetime, since I am the one who has always been envious of you — how you are so much more talented than me, especially how you receive all of the family's affection." Fang Zhelan sighed.

"Are you angry at me?" Fang Xiaoru asked her. "For not helping you."

"Why would I be angry at you? You were the only one who didn't bully me. If I should be angry at someone, it should be towards our parents and the Fang Family itself. They treat people who have lesser talents as though they are trash."

"Anyway, enough of the Fang Family. You joined the Profound Blossom Sect for Su Yang, right?"

Fang Xiaoru nodded after hearing her question, not denying that Su Yang is the only reason she is interested in this place.

"Su Yang is really amazing. To think he'd charm someone like you without any effort — only by standing in the same room as you." Fang Zhelan couldn't help but smile.

And she continued, "So? What was it about him that caused your heart to flutter? Is it his handsome face? His demeanor? Or the otherworldly aura that surrounds him?"

"His gaze." Fang Xiaoru answered without hesitation.

"His gaze...?" Fang Zhelan repeated after her.

She nodded and explained in a passionate voice, "When he looked at me, even though it was only a quick glance, it felt as though he could see everything about me and I was no different from being naked when before his eyes. I have never felt such a powerful and profound gaze before, and it instantly caused my heart to beat loudly."

"..."

Fang Zhelan was speechless when she saw the expression on Fang Xiaoru's face as she spoke of Su Yang's sharp gaze, as it was no different than a maiden experiencing her first love.

'It only took a single gaze from Su Yang to bring someone like Fang Xianru, who is known for being distant and condescending, down to her knees...' Fang Zhelan sighed inwardly, as she wasn't sure whether she should fear or admire such a terrifying ability.

### **Chapter 558 Offering Her Body**

After helping Fang Xiaoru receive her disciple robes and finding a living quarter, Fang Zhelan said to her, "Now that you have everything you need, I will go through the Sect Rules and your privileges as a Core Disciple."

A few minutes later, after explaining the rules to her, Fang Zhelan spoke about her privileges, "As a Core Disciple, you will get unlimited support by the Sect. This means that as long as it's justified, you can ask for any amount of spirit stones."

"Any amount of spirit stones? Is the Profound Blossom Sect very wealthy or something?" Fang Xiaoru asked.

"I guess it's something like that..." she nodded, not daring to reveal to her that they'd recently used 300 million spirit stones in one go.

"Then do you think I'll be able to get a spiritual treasure? Now that I am no longer with the Fang Family, I no longer have access to one."

"The Sect Masters deal with the spiritual weapons and the cultivation techniques, so you'll have to ask them about that, but I don't see why they won't give you one, as we have plenty of spiritual treasures." Fang Zhelan said.

"Anyway, you should speak to Su Yang about your cultivation technique now that you are done here."

Fang Xiaoru nodded, and she said, "Thank you for everything, Elder Sister."

"There's no need to thank me. I am only doing what I should as your Elder Sister." Fang Zhelan responded with a smile. "If you need anything in the future, you can come to me."

Right before Fang Xiaoru left, she suddenly embraced Fang Zhelan, dumbfounding her, as this is the first time she has ever felt her younger sister's embrace.

Sometime later, Fang Xiaoru went to the Yin Yang Pavilion to look for Su Yang.

"You... you... what the hell are you doing here, Fang Xiaoru?!"

When Su Yin saw Fang Xiaoru in the Profound Blossom Sect's disciple robes, her eyes widened with shock.

"Su Yin..." Fang Xiaoru narrowed her eyes. "I can ask you the same question. Why are you here?"

"Oh? So the two of you already know each other?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"Since the Four Great Families like to gather almost every year to have friendly exchanges between the junior generation for bragging rights, of course, we would know each other. In fact, we have sparred with each other plenty of times." Su Yin explained to him their relationship.

"Indeed, we have fought 7 times in total." Fang Xiaoru nodded, and she continued, "By the way, I won 5 out of those 7 times."

"T-That's because I was still young and inexperienced! I defeated you two times in a row in the last two gatherings! How dare you try and embarrass me in front of my Elder Brother! Let's fight right now, Fang Xiaoru!" Su Yin pointed at her with a red face.

"Hmph. I don't have the time to deal with you right now, Su Yin, as I am here for the Sect Master." Fang Xiaoru said before looking at Su Yang.

"Sect Master, as promised, I am here to offer you my body for allowing me to take the disciple examination," she said to him with a calm expression.

"W-W-What?!" Su Yin trembled in shock after hearing her words.

"What is going on here, Elder Brother?!"

Su Yang smiled and gave her a quick explanation of what had happened recently.

"Anyway, you don't need to give me your body, because it was Fang Zhelan who allowed you to partake in the examination, not me," he said to Fang Xiaoru. "And you are not in the Dual Cultivation Division, so I cannot cultivate with you without any reason."

"That's right! Know your place, Fang Xiaoru! And just to be clear, I am technically also a disciple of the Profound Blossom Sect!" Su Yin added.

However, Fang Xiaoru ignored Su Yin's clear provocation and said to Su Yang, "Then you will have se—cultivate with me if I join the Dual Cultivation Division?"

"..."

Su Yang rubbed his temple. Knowing her character and her determination, Fang Xiaoru probably won't leave him alone until he cultivates with her. Furthermore, it was clear as day that the reason why Fang Xiaoru even joined the Profound Blossom Sect was so she could be close to him.

After a moment of silence, Su Yang sighed, "Well, since you did sacrifice a lot to join the Sect, I guess I can grant you this one request."

After all, it would be too cruel to reject her after she abandoned her family just to be in the Sect.

"What?!" Su Yin looked at him with a face of disbelief. "Are you sure about this, Elder Brother? She's from the Fang Family, a place that's filled to the brim with arrogant people! And this Fang Xiaoru is the worst of them all, as she doesn't care about anyone but herself!"

Hearing her words, Fang Xiaoru spoke with a frown, "Can you stop badmouthing me already, Su Yin? Just because I defeated you more than you defeated me, you don't have to be so mean. And I have already left the Fang Family."

❓❓❓W-Wait a second... what did you just say?" Su Yin looked at her with wide eyes. "Y-You left the Fang Family? You are lying!"

Su Yang shook his head and said, "I should've said this when I explained to you earlier, but she left the Fang Family in order to join the Profound Blossom Sect, so she's not lying."

"Why on earth would you do something like that?! Aren't you one of their top geniuses?! I cannot believe that the Fang Family would allow you to leave so easily, especially after spending so many resources and effort on you!"

"I know that my mother won't let me leave so easily, but I will deal with it when the time comes." Fang Xiaoru said, and she continued with a slightly bashful expression. "After all, I will do anything to be with the Sect Master."

Su Yin's jaw dropped to the floor after hearing her words, as she didn't know that Fang Xiaoru could make such an innocent expression. It was almost like Fang Xiaoru had turned into a different individual!

### **Chapter 559 Drenched in Yin Qi**

"Anyway, let's go to your living quarters." Su Yang said to Fang Xiaoru afterward.

"Elder Brother, you should be careful. Who knows what she or the Fang Family might be planning. It could be a trap." Su Yin whispered in his ears before they left the Yin Yang Pavilion.

"I'll keep that in mind," he nodded with a smile.

After leaving the Yin Yang Pavilion, Su Yang followed Fang Xiaoru to her living quarters.

Once inside, Su Yang handed her the martial technique that her Sublime Mountain Fist originated from.

"There are a grand total of 6 martial techniques you can learn from this technique, and the Sublime Mountain Fist is the weakest one amongst all 6 techniques. Of course, this is still only half of the full technique, which has a grand total of 12 martial techniques."

Fang Xiaoru stared at the martial technique silently, before asking him a moment later, "Are you not worried that I am lying to you? That I might run away with this martial technique? That I might share this technique with the Fang Family?"

Su Yang smiled and said, "Because I am confident that I can retrieve it no matter who you decide to give it to."

"I see..." Fang Xiaoru accepted the technique a few moments later.

After storing the technique into her storage ring, she turned to look at him and said, "As promised, I will now offer you this body..."

She began removing her robes on the spot, revealing her slim and beautiful body.

"..."

Su Yang silently looked at her peerless body, and as expected of Fang Zhelan's younger sister, she was as beautiful as her Elder Sister.

"I have never done this before, so I will need you to lead me..." she said a moment later in a low, bashful voice.

Su Yang nodded and pulled her into one of the rooms, before laying her on the bed.

"Ahh... this is more embarrassing than I thought it would be..." she mumbled, feeling Su Yang's sharp gaze all over her naked body.

"Let me loosen you up first." Su Yang said to her before he approached her lower lips with his mouth.

"Ahhhn~!" Fang Xiaoru moaned loudly when she felt his tongue touch her soft petals.

A few seconds later, Yin Qi gushed out from her hole, spraying all over Su Yang's face.

"Ah! I-I'm sorry... It just came out suddenly..." she apologized to him afterward.

"There's no need for an apology. I could've avoided it since I knew it was coming, but I consider it an honor to be soaked in Yin Qi." Su Yang said as he calmly licked the Yin Qi on his face with a charming expression.

Fang Xiaoru's face flushed with redness after seeing his actions.

A moment later, Su Yang removed his robes, showing his handsome body to her.

"So big..." Fang Xiaoru covered her mouth in shock after seeing the large and intimidating rod that was between his legs.

"I'm going to put it in now," he warned her.

"Go ahead." She nodded.

Su Yang began pushing the tip of his sword into the slit between her legs, tearing her small hole wide open.

"Mmmm!" Fang Xiaoru bit down on her lips to endure the pain, and she could feel her hole burning with passion.

Once his entire sword was inside her body, Su Yang began moving his hips, thrusting and rubbing his thick rod against her inner cave.

"Ahhhhn~"

"Ahhhhhhhn~"

"Ahhhhh!"

Fang Xiaoru moaned loudly as Su Yang pounded her tight hole intensely, feeling as though her body was surrounded by fire. It was a heavenly experience that couldn't be described by words.

"Mmmm~"

"Ooooh!"

"Ahhhhn~!"

"I-It's coming out again!"

Fang Xiaoru's body trembled violently, and a moment later, another wave of Yin Qi gushed out from her lower hole.

However, Su Yang did not stop moving his hips, and he continued to thrust into her body while she was releasing her Yin Qi, causing even more Yin Qi to gush out.

"Ahhhhn! I can't stop it from coming out!" Fang Xiaoru exclaimed in a nervous voice as her body continued to release Yin Qi uncontrollably even many moments later.

"There's no need to be afraid. Let it all out." Su Yang said to her whilst his lower body continuously pounded the tight hole in front of him.

In just a few minutes, Fang Xiaoru had climaxed over ten times, feeling exhausted afterward, almost like she'd just finished a marathon around the world.

"That was... amazing..." Fang Xiaoru said to him in a low, panting voice.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Your squirting is also amazing. I am drenched in your Yin Qi."



Fang Xiaoru's face exploded with redness after hearing his words. Looking at Su Yang's appearance right now, he looked like he just took a bath, as his hair and body were soaked in her holy water.

"Do you want to continue? We have plenty of time today." Su Yang asked her sometime later.

"Un," she nodded slowly.

A few moments later, Su Yang inserted his sword into her cave, and they began cultivating again.

Over the next few hours, Su Yang and Fang Xiaoru would cultivate with each other numerous times, and Fang Xiaoru had released her Yin Qi so many times that she'd long lost count.

"Thank you, Su Yang, for this wonderful experience. I will remember it for the rest of my life..." she said to him afterward.

Su Yang merely smiled and said, "You can find me whenever you feel like cultivating again. I will entertain you if I have the time."

"I won't be humble then..." she said, and she continued. "I will definitely catch up to Elder Sister."

"Fang Zhelan?" Su Yang chuckled. "Then you have a lot of 'catching up' to do."

"Really...?" she looked at him with a dazed expression.

"That's to be expected, as she has been a disciple here for far longer than you, and we have cultivated almost every day for half a year straight, even doing it multiple times a day," he said.

◆◆ I see..." she nodded a moment later, her eyes filled with determination to 'catch up' to Fang Zhelan.

## **Chapter 560 Azure Cloud Sect**

A few days have passed since Fang Xiaoru has become a disciple of the Profound Blossom Sect. Meanwhile, at the Azure Cloud Sect, the Fang Family had just arrived at their front doors.

"We have been expecting you, Matriarch Fang." Gu Guanting greeted her at the entrance with a delightful expression on his face, as he has been waiting for this day ever since he learned that Fang Family's genius, Fang Xiaoru, will be joining their Sect.

However, when he saw the unpleasant expression on Fang Xianjue's face, he asked her in a worried voice, "Is there something wrong, Matriarch Fang?"

"Let's hope not," she responded a moment later, and she continued, "Anyway, my daughter, Fang Xiaoru, will be arriving a few days late. I apologize for any inconvenience this may cause to your Sect."

"There's no need to apologize for such a small matter. In fact, we cannot be grateful enough to the Fang Family for trusting the Azure Cloud Sect enough to let us train Fang Xiaoru, one of the top geniuses in this world." Gu Guanting said with a smile.

Even though he said that the Azure Cloud Sect will be training Fang Xiaoru, in reality, it was Hong Yu'er who will be training her, as there was simply no way that an ordinary Sect like the Azure Cloud Sect could train a genius like Fang Xiaoru.

While they may have finished the Regional Tournament in second place and even had been bestowed the title of Elite by the Xie Family, the Azure Cloud Sect is only worth something because of Hong Yu'er, who has become the backbone and face of the entire Sect.

Without Hong Yu'er, the Azure Cloud Sect is only an above-average Sect at best, but they are definitely nothing compared to a real Elite Sect.

Sometime later, Gu Guanting brought the Fang Family into the Sect and arranged the best living quarters they had available for them.

Afterward, the Fang Family sealed themselves inside their living quarters for the next few days — until the time limit of 1 week Fang Xianjue gave to Fang Xiaoru was up.

"That ungrateful brat!" Fang Xianjue angrily stomped the floor, her face filled with rage. "After all that we have done for her and all of the resources we gave her, she dares to leave the family for the Profound Blossom Sect?! Does that little brat not have a heart?!"

"What should we do, Matriarch? Are we really going to fight with the Profound Blossom Sect?" One of the Elders asked her.

"Are you stupid?!" she suddenly roared at the Elder who just spoke, and she continued, "Did you forget who was at the Profound Blossom Sect?! Xie Wang, the Ancestor of the Xie Family!"

"Even though he said that he doesn't care about our family dispute, what kind of idiot would believe such a blatant lie?"

"Even if he doesn't intervene in our drama, the reputation and trust our Fang Family has built over many decades will be lost the moment we attack them, as the Xie Family will definitely side with the Profound Blossom Sect!"

"Then is there truly nothing we can do to make Fang Xiaoru come back to us?" The Elder asked.

Losing Fang Xiaoru, a top genius, would be too big of a loss even for a family as powerful and influential as the Fang Family.

Fang Xianjue sighed and spoke, "Now that the Xie Family is aware of our presence, it's near impossible to deal with them quietly. It's unfortunate, but we'll have to give up for now. However, I will talk to the Patriarch before anything."

After waiting for a few more days just in case Fang Xiaoru decided to show up but to no avail, Fang Xianjue decided to reveal the situation to Gu Guanting.

"I would like to deeply apologize to the Azure Cloud Sect and the Sect Master, as it appears that my foolish child has decided to join the Profound Blossom Sect as a last-minute decision. If there's anything I can do to make up for this trouble, the Fang Family will not spare any effort."

"Fang Xiaoru joined the Profound Blossom Sect...?" Gu Guanting stared at her with a gawking expression, almost as though he couldn't believe his ears.

"Hahaha... now this is quite funny." Tang Lingxi suddenly appeared out of the blue while laughing.

"Hong Yu'er!" Fang Xianjue looked at her with wide eyes, as she couldn't comprehend why she was laughing.

"I didn't expect this situation, but I cannot say that I am surprised," said Tang Lingxi with a smile on her face. "Well, at least I won't have to train her now. I should thank Su Yang for taking her off my hands the next time I see him."

"H-How did you know that he was behind this? I didn't even mention his name..." Fang Xianjue asked her with a puzzled expression, as she'd only mentioned about Fang Xiaoru joining the Profound Blossom Sect.

Tang Lingxi smiled and spoke, "Let's just say that this isn't the first time that it has happened."

"N-Not the first time...?" Both Fang Xianjue and Gu Guanting looked at her with a dumbfounded expression on their faces.

"Anyway, you shouldn't worry too much about Fang Xiaoru joining the Profound Blossom Sect. In fact, I would even go as far as to say that she has made the right choice by going there instead." Tang Lingxi said, and she continued, "She'll learn more over there with Su Yang than she can in this place with me, as he has far more experience in teaching others than me."

Hearing Tang Lingxi praise Su Yang, Fang Xianjue didn't know how to react and remained standing there with a dazed face. Could it be true? That Fang Xiaoru would receive more at the Profound Blossom Sect than at the Azure Cloud Sect?

As for Gu Guanting, he felt like crying after listening to Tang Lingxi badmouth the Azure Cloud Sect whilst comparing them to the Profound Blossom Sect.

'Are you a disciple of the Azure Cloud Sect, or are you actually from the Profound Blossom Sect?' he cried inwardly.

### **Chapter 561 A Sense of Connection**

"Do we really have to leave already?" Su Yin looked at Bai Lihua with a reluctant expression after being told that it was time for them to return to the Heavenly Swan Sect.

"We have already stayed in the Profound Blossom Sect for longer than we'd anticipated." Bai Lihua said to her. "Although you may not mind it, it's embarrassing for a Sect Master to stay at another Sect for so long."

"Furthermore, the gathering organized by the mysterious Pill Master who discovered the Earth Advancement Pill will be happening very soon, and I cannot afford to miss such a grand event."

"You should listen to your Sect Master and return to the Heavenly Swan Sect." Su Yang suddenly said to her, and he continued, "I will also be very busy in the upcoming days, so I will not have any time to play with you."

After hearing his words, Su Yin nodded with a saddened expression. "I wanted to stay with you for a little bit longer, but I guess that will have to wait until another time."

"Are you also going to participate in the alchemy gathering?" Bai Lihua suddenly asked him with interest.

"Something like that," he replied with a mysterious smile on his face.

"Are you interested in the Alchemist behind the Earth Advancement Pills, or are you just interested in the pills?" she asked him.

"What about you? Does this mysterious Alchemist attract your attention?"

Bai Lihua smiled and said, "Of course, I am interested in this Alchemist that appeared out of thin air and managed to usher the Cultivation world into a new era with just a single pill. Are you jealous?"

"Maybe just a little bit." Su Yang chuckled.

"Wait a second..." Bai Lihua suddenly frowned. "I nearly forgot about this because of the Regional Tournament, but you claimed to know the real identity of this mysterious Alchemist! And you even promised me that you'll let me meet with him if the Heavenly Swan Sect formed an Alliance with the Profound Blossom Sect!"

"Did I say something like that?" Su Yang immediately pretended to know nothing about it.

"You... you shameless little pervert! I bet all that talk about refining the Heavenly Swan Sect's formation is also nothing but a lie!" Bai Lihua looked at him with a slightly angry expression.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Calm down, I won't break my promise. As for meeting the Alchemist behind the Earth Advancement Pills, I will introduce you to him at the gathering."

"R-Really?!" Bai Lihua's attitude immediately became cheerful, even feeling the urge to embrace Su Yang tightly from overjoy.

He nodded and continued, "However, I will only introduce you to him. Anything after that will require your own efforts."

"Don't you worry, I can handle myself," she said.

"Then I will see you at the gathering next week." Su Yang said to her.

Sometime later, Bai Lihua and Su Yin left the Profound Blossom Sect and began making their way back to their own Sect.

After they left, Su Yang also began his preparations for the gathering next week.

Meanwhile, at the Medicine Hall, Su Liqing and her disciples were busy studying the medicine and herb scroll provided to them by Su Yang, which had millions of unique herbs and recipes for medicine written inside.

"Just where did Su Yang obtain such a profound scroll? I do not recognize 99% of the things written in here..." One of the disciples expressed her awe for the scroll.

"Knowing him, it's probably better if we don't try to find out..." said another disciple.

It was at this moment a figure walked into the Medicine Hall.

"Senior apprentice-sister Sun!" The disciples inside greeted Sun Jingjing, who made an unexpected appearance.

"Are you looking for medicine today, senior apprentice-sister?" One of the disciples asked her.

Sun Jingjing shook her head and spoke, "No, I am here for Elder Lan today."

"Master? She's currently in her room upstairs."

"Do you think I can speak with her for a moment?" Sun Jingjing asked.

"It should be fine since we're not really doing anything at this moment besides studying."

Sun Jingjing nodded and began making her way upstairs.

"I wonder what senior apprentice-sister Sun wants with the Master, as she rarely comes here." The disciples pondered to themselves.

Meanwhile, once she reached Su Liqing's room, Sun Jingjing knocked on the door.

"Come inside." Su Liqing's voice resounded from inside the room.

A few moments later, Sun Jingjing entered the room.

"You are..."

When Su Liqing saw Sun Jingjing, she immediately felt a strong sense of connection between them, almost as though they have known each other for a very long time.

It was the same for Sun Jingjing. The moment she laid eyes on Su Liqing, it felt as though she was looking at a family member, and there was no awkwardness between them despite barely knowing each other.

"Junior sister Sun Jingjing, right? What brings you here today?" Su Liqing was the first to break the silence and ask her.

"No particular reason, really. Though, I was told by Su Yang to come see you when I have the time." Sun Jingjing said.

"Su Yang?" Su Liqing raised her eyebrows, unsure why he would want Sun Jingjing to speak with her.

"He didn't tell me why I should meet you, but he did say that I will know it when I meet you..." Sun Jingjing stared at her with narrowed eyes.

A few moments of silence later, Sun Jingjing spoke, "Elder Lan... do you perhaps also have this...?"

Sun Jingjing suddenly lifted her robes to show Su Liqing her Family Mark.

"T-That mark is!" Su Liqing's eyes widened with surprise after seeing the Family Mark on Sun Jingjing's body, as her body also has the exact same mark.

Seeing Su Liqing's reaction, Sun Jingjing immediately realized the situation they were in, and she mumbled in a dazed voice. "I see... so Elder Lan is also part of Su Yang's Family... No wonder why he wanted us to meet each other..."

## Chapter 562 Returning to Snowfall City

"Elder Lan, you also have Su Yang's Family Mark, right?" Sun Jingjing asked her just to be sure.

Su Liqing nodded, and she spoke, "By the way, I took Su Yang's surname, so I am no longer Lan Liqing, but Su Liqing."

"Unbelievable... I knew there was something special about you when I saw you at the disciple examination. When did your relationship with Su Yang begin? I would never have guessed that the two of you were so intimate with each other if not for the Family Mark." Sun Jingjing asked with her eyes filled with interest.

"Where should I start?" Su Liqing showed a smile, and she began recalling her history with Su Yang, beginning from when he was only an Outer Court disciple.

Since Sun Jingjing also has the Family Mark, it meant that Su Yang completely trusts her, so she wasn't uncomfortable when telling Sun Jingjing about her relationship with Su Yang, even feeling delightful, as she finally has someone she could talk to freely.

Sometime later, after listening to Su Liqing's story, Sun Jingjing expressed surprise and admiration.

"Senior Sister, you are actually more daring than I'd expected! To think you have been in a relationship with Su Yang ever since he was only an Outer Court disciple, even ignoring the Sect Rules! I don't know if I can do the same if I were in your shoes!"

Su Liqing laughed gracefully, and she spoke, "Now that I have told you my story, why don't you tell me yours?"

Sun Jingjing nodded and began telling her own story, and the two of them remained inside the room chatting about their own background and Su Yang for many minutes, acting like they were real sisters.

Meanwhile, after he finished his preparations for the gathering, Su Yang went to check on Yan Yan.

"As expected of someone favored by the Heavens... it's only been a few days since I last saw you and your cultivation has already risen by a level." Su Yang praised her ridiculous cultivation speed.

"This is all because of the cultivation technique you gave me, Master." Yan Yan said, and she continued, "It also helps having so many spirit stones."

Su Yang nodded and said, "You'll reach the Heavenly Spirit Realm by the end of the year at this rate."

After checking up on Yan Yan, Su Yang went to see Zhang Xiu Ying, who was also progressing smoothly with the cultivation technique he created for her.

"Su Yang! This cultivation technique you created is phenomenal! It feels as though I am still cultivating the Burning Lotus Sect's technique, but it's countless times faster!" Zhang Xiu Ying said.

"I'm glad you like it. Anyways, I will be away from the Sect for a few days, so if you need anything, just look for Liu Lanzhi, or you can contact me using the communication jade slip," he said.

Zhang Xiu Ying nodded.

Sometime later, Su Yang left the Profound Blossom Sect and went to look for Wang Shuren at the Burning Lotus Sect.

"Su Yang, you have arrived faster than I'd anticipated," Wang Shuren said after letting him into her house.

"I want to concoct a few pills before the gathering, and all of the ingredients are here."

"Oh? Can I watch?" she quickly asked him with her eyes filled with excitement.

"Do whatever you want," he said before entering the pill room.

A few minutes later, Su Yang began concocting pills while Wang Shuren watched him in the corner, looking like a child filled with amusement.

'It is exciting no matter how many times I watch him concoct pills. There's just something very mesmerizing about his movements, and it feels almost like I am watching a concert.'

In what felt like a blink of her eyes, Su Yang finished concocting a dozen unique pills.

"What are you going to do with those pills?" she asked him afterward.

"You will see during the gathering," he said with a mysterious smile.

"Anyway, are you ready for the gathering?" He asked her a moment later.

"Yes, the location for the gathering has already been set up, and I have just been waiting for you."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Good, then let's go to the location right now."

"Right now? The gathering isn't till next week," she said.

"It'll only take a few minutes."

Sometime later, Su Yang brought Wang Shuren onto the flying ship for the first time.

"Where are we going?" He asked her.

"Snowfall City." Wang Shuren quickly responded.

Su Yang raised his eyebrows. He didn't think that he'd return to that place so soon.

"Within the city, there is a very spacious gathering area that can fit thousands of people with ease. It is normally used by the Xie Family when they have an assembly with multiple families and Sects at once, so it's the perfect place to have our gathering. I have already asked the Xie Family for permission to use it, and since Lord Xie will also be at the gathering, he allowed us to use it without any complications."

"Very well. Hold on tight." Su Yang said to her.

Wang Shuren did not think much about it and tightly grabbed onto the flying ship.

Whoosh!

When the flying ship began moving, Wang Shuren felt as though her soul was left behind by the insanely fast speed they were traveling at, and before she could even calm down, they'd already arrived at Snowfall City.

"Ugh... I feel like throwing up..." Wang Shuren had trouble standing still afterward, even tripping on the boat when she tried to get off.

"Are we already at Snowfall City? Just how fast can the flying ship travel?"

"It can travel thousands of miles in the blink of an eye," he said with a smile.

"Unbelievable..."

Once Wang Shuren calmed down, the two of them entered the city.

Although it cannot compare to the time of the Regional Tournament, when there were millions of people trying to enter the city, there are still a considerable number of people trying to get into the city at this moment.

And unlike the previous time, they were able to enter the city without any problems.

However, right as they entered the city, Su Yang could hear the sound of a whip cracking, followed by a familiar-sounding voice screaming in pain.

### **Chapter 563 Public Torture**

Pap!

"AHHH!"

Pap!

"AHHHHHH!"

Pap!"

"GAHHH!"

"This voice belongs to... Fu Kuan?" Although it took her a moment, Wang Shuren recognized his voice.

"We have plenty of time before the gathering, so why don't we take a detour and see for ourselves how our little 'friend' has been holding up these days?" Su Yang said with a grin on his face.

Wang Shuren nodded her head, as she was also curious how they were punishing Fu Kuan.

Thus, they began following the direction of the scream, and as they got closer to the screaming, the louder and sharper it got.

A few minutes later, they arrived at a spacious open area, and in the middle of this place was a small stage with Fu Kuan chained in the air on the stage.

Pap!

"Ahhhhh!"



Fu Kuan's ear-piercing scream resounded again as another man on the stage whipped his back.

Pap!

"Ahhhhhh!"

Pap!

"Ahhhh!"

Su Yang and Wang Shuren watched as the man continuously whipped Fu Kuan's back.

Seeing the puddle of fresh blood underneath Fu Kuan caused Wang Shuren's eyebrows to tremble in shock.

"I have heard rumors, but I didn't think it would be this bad..." Wang Shuren mumbled to herself after witnessing the situation for herself, and she couldn't help but feel pity for Fu Kuan.

"A hundred whips for each life he took, huh? Who knows how long it'll take to carry out his punishment." Su Yang spoke with a calm expression on his face, almost as though he wasn't fazed by the brutal scene before him.

Pap!

"Ahhhh!"

After Fu Kuan received ten whips, the punisher stopped whipping him to pour a bucket of green liquid on his body.

"This is... medicine?" Wang Shuren's sharp noise instantly picked up the herbal aroma from the water splashed onto Fu Kuan.

A few minutes later, the bloody scars on Fu Kuan's back disappeared, almost as though the punishment never took place.

Once all of the scars were gone, the punisher raised the whip in his grasp and began whipping Fu Kuan again.

Pap!

"Ahhhh!"

"They healed his injury so they don't kill him by accident before they finish the punishment, huh? Wasting precious medicine on a prisoner just to continue torturing him, the Xie Family is adamant about carrying out his entire punishment, even if it'll cost them many resources and effort." Su Yang smiled.

After lingering around and watching Fu Kuan get tortured for a few more minutes, Wang Shuren spoke with a pale complexion, "Let's leave, Su Yang. I don't want to watch this anymore."

Su Yang nodded.

However, just as he turned around, Fu Kuan noticed him and called out to him, "S-S-Su Yang?! I-I-Is that you, S-Su Yang?!"

"P-P-Please...! H-Help me! I-I was wrong! I was truly wrong for messing with the P-Profound Blossom Sect! H-Have M-Mercy and kill me already!"

Fu Kuan pleaded for mercy on the stage, causing everybody there to look at Su Yang. Even the punisher stopped whipping Fu Kuan to look at him.

"It's really Su Yang! I heard that he was the one who stopped Fu Kuan from causing massive destruction in the Eastern Continent!"

"I wonder why he's here."

"Maybe he's here to rub it in Fu Kuan's face?"

The spectators mumbled to each other.

"You want me to kill you?" Su Yang looked at Fu Kuan with a nonchalant expression.

"Y-Yes! Please! J-Just kill me already! If I have to endure this for any longer, I will really go insane!"

"Hmmm..." Su Yang made a pondering expression, almost as though he was truly thinking about Fu Kuan's words, giving Fu Kuan some hope.

He suddenly turned to look at Wang Shuren and asked her, "What do you think? Should I end his suffering and kill him?"

Wang Shuren looked at him with a face that spoke, "Why are you asking me? He's your problem."

A moment later, Su Yang returned to looking at Fu Kuan, and he spoke with a grin on his face, "I would kill you if I could, but unfortunately for the both of us, I would rather not soil my hands with your dirty blood, so you'll have to endure it for a little bit longer."

"A little bit longer, you say?!" Fu Kuan's face immediately turned red from anger, and he began moving his body erratically and fiercely, almost as though he wanted to break out of his chains and attack Su Yang.

Pap!

The punisher whipped Fu Kuan to calm him down, but Fu Kuan ignored the pain in his body and continued to bare his fangs at Su Yang like a beast.

"Ahhhhh! I will kill you, Su Yang! I will fucking kill you! Come over here so I can kill you!!!" Fu Kuan began screaming like a madman, even spitting his blood everywhere.

However, without his cultivation base, Fu Kuan was no different than an ordinary mortal. Let alone attacking Su Yang, he didn't even have the strength to break the steel chains that wrapped around all four of his limbs.

"Hahaha..." Su Yang burst out laughing at this scene, and he spoke, "Hang in there, little friend. If you can persist until I have nine grandchildren then I might consider ending your life."

"How dare you screw with me, Su Yang?! I swear I will fucking haunt you even after my death!"

"Good luck with that — dying, that is! I'll be cheering for you!" Su Yang waved at Fu Kuan before leaving the area with a smile on his face.

After Su Yang left the area, Fu Kuan coughed up a mouthful of blood before losing consciousness.

Seeing this, the punisher decided to end the punishment for the time being to allow Fu Kuan to rest. After all, if he continues to torture Fu Kuan and accidentally kill him, who knows what the Xie Family, or even worse, Su Yang, might do to him.

"Even though I think the punishment is a little bit too harsh, Fu Kuan has to take responsibility for those 36,000 disciples he'd betrayed and killed." Wang Shuren sighed afterward, and she continued, "Even if he somehow outlives the punishment, I doubt he'll be the same person ever again, as the mental toll for being torture so long will surely break his mind until nothing is left."

### **Chapter 564 The Day of the Gathering**

"Halt! You are before the Xie Family's Assembly Hall! Identify yourselves!"

When Su Yang and Wang Shuren arrived at the location, they were stopped by the guard guarding that place.

Wang Shuren stepped forward and showed the guard Xie Family's medallion along with a letter from Lord Xie stating their permission to use the Assembly Hall.

"Ah! You must be Alchemy Master Wang from the Burning Lotus Sect. We have been expecting you. By the way, who is that person behind you?"

The guard suddenly pointed at Su Yang, who had changed his clothes and covered his face with a mask before arriving at the location.

"This is my Master, the esteemed Alchemy Master who allowed for this gathering to happen in the first place." Wang Shuren said to the guard.

"The Alchemy Master who discovered the Earth Advancement Pills?! Excuse us for not recognizing you, Esteemed Senior!"

The guard bowed deeply to him before allowing them into the Assembly Hall.

After entering the building, Su Yang looked at the spacious area with approval.

"How many families will attend the gathering?" he asked her.

"The participants have increased to 130 sects and 269 families since I last mentioned it. Furthermore, I have limited each family and sect to only 2 individuals that could participate in the gathering, so we shouldn't see more than a few hundred people."

"I see... You have done a great job setting this entire time up by yourself," Su Yang suddenly praised her, and he continued, "Do you have anything you want for your contributions? I'll reward you."

"Uh... Nothing in particular..." Wang Shuren responded with a dazed expression, as she didn't expect him to reward her.

"There's no need to be humble," he said.

"Then... Can I learn more about the Demon Heart Pill? I have been interested in it ever since I saw it," she said after pondering for a moment.

"Is that all you want? The Demon Heart Pill isn't anything impressive."

"That's enough for me." Wang Shuren nodded.

"Okay. Then I will give you the recipe after we leave this place."

"Thank you, Su— Master!" Wang Shuren bowed to him.

Meanwhile, at the Xie Family, Lord Xie gazed at the subordinate before him and spoke, "What? The mysterious Alchemy Master has arrived at the Assembly Hall with Wang Shuren? Are you certain it's him?"

"Yes, Your Majesty. Wang Shuren herself introduced him as her Master."

"What about his identity? Do we know anything about him?" Lord Xie continued to ask.

"No, he was wearing a mask and his entire body was wrapped in black robes. It appears that he intends on hiding his identity."

"I see... Is there anything else I should know about?"

"We have received news that Su Yang from the Profound Blossom Sect has appeared in the city. He was also seen entering the city with Wang Shuren, but he has disappeared somewhere afterward."

"Su Yang? What the hell is that brat doing all the way here? Is he going to participate in the gathering, too?" Lord Xie mumbled to himself.

"No... what if he has connections to the mysterious Alchemy Master? Knowing him, I am almost certain that he's related to the Alchemy Master in some way!"

Because of Su Yang's age and background, the thought of Su Yang being the mysterious Alchemy Master did not even cross Lord Xie's mind. No matter how talented one might be, there's simply no way they can become a Master Alchemist without many years of experience.

"Anyway, I am going to the Assembly Hall to greet this Alchemist Master." Lord Xie said to his subordinate before leaving the room.

Many minutes later, Lord Xie arrived at the Assembly Hall.

"Where is the Senior Alchemist?" he asked the guard.

"Uh... Wang Shuren and the Senior Alchemist have already left the Assembly Hall, Your Majesty."

"What? I came here as soon as I heard about it! Do you know where they went?"

However, the guard shook his head. "No, Your Majesty. They left the place without saying a word after a quick look around."

'Damn! I wanted to take advantage of the situation and create a connection between us before the gathering, but it seems like that won't be possible anymore!' Lord Xie cried inwardly.

However, Lord Xie did not give up so easily and proceeded to wait inside the Assembly Hall just in case the Alchemist Master returned.

But alas, Wang Shuren, and Su Yang had long returned to the Burning Lotus Sect, making Lord Xie's efforts a vain.

Inside Wang Shuren's living quarters, Su Yang handed her the recipe for the Demon Heart Pill and proceeded to train her over the next few days until it was time for the gathering.

A few days later, Su Yang and Wang Shuren emerged from the pill room with Wang Shuren fully naked and covered in sweat.

"If you haven't already, bring your cauldron with you. I'll demonstrate my abilities before we even begin talking." Su Yang said.

Wang Shuren nodded before cleaning herself in the bathroom.

Once they were prepared to leave, Su Yang brought out the flying ship, and they returned to Snowfall City.

However, this time around, Su Yang wore his disguise before leaving the Burning Lotus Sect.

On the day of the gathering, countless renowned experts from famous families and powerful sects could be seen entering Snowfall City one after another, shocking the ignorant people outside and inside the city.

"Look! That's the Patriarch of the Jiang Family from the Western Region! What is he doing all the way over here?!"

"Look behind him! That's the head of the Ling Family, who is known for his expertise in medicine!"

"Even the Sect Leader of the Divine Nature Garden, one of the leading Pill Masters in this world, is going to Snowfall City! And he even brought his disciple with him!"

"With the gathering of so many renowned experts from all around the world, something big must be happening soon if it hasn't happened already!"

### **Chapter 565 A Gathering of Experts**

"Senior Zeng! I did not expect to see you here! How long has it been since you left the Divine Nature Garden? It must have been decades since I last saw you!"

"Hmm? If it isn't Patriarch Cai. Has it really been that long since our last meeting? I swear it feels like we met not long ago."

Inside the Assembly Hall, where the seats are quickly being filled with experts, two old men spoke with each other.

One of them was known as Senior Zeng, Sect Master of the divine Nature Garden, one of few Sects in this world that mainly focuses on medicine and pills.

The old man sitting beside him was the Patriarch of the Cai Clan, who is renowned for his medical expertise.

These two individuals alone were peak experts that are rarely seen in public, much less the both of them at the same time, and there were many other powerful and influential people like Senior Zeng and Patriarch Cai gathered in the Assembly Hall.

Any single individual in the Assembly Hall has immense influence in the world who could shake the Eastern Continent with a single command, and to have so many of them gathered in one spot, it was truly an unprecedented sight.

"I heard that you'd recently accepted a new disciple. Would that disciple happen to be that young miss by your side?" Patriarch Cai looked at the beautiful young lady sitting beside Senior Zeng.

"Hahaha... Indeed, this is my precious disciple. I brought her here hoping that she could learn a thing or two from this mysterious Alchemy Master who shook the world with the Earth Advancement Pill." Senior Zeng laughed, and he continued while looking at the young girl beside Patriarch Cai, "I see that you've also brought someone with you."

"This is my youngest daughter, Cai Zhuohua. Greet Senior Zeng, Zhuohua."

"Junior Cai greets Senior Zeng. This Junior has been wishing to meet Senior ever since she heard of your grand feats in the field of medicine. It is an honor to finally meet you."

"Haha... what an elegant and polite Young Lady. The Cai Clan is lucky to have someone like you in their family." Senior Zeng laughed loudly.

Although Senior Zeng acted oblivious, it was obvious why Patriarch Cai would bring a young beauty to such an important gathering that was unbecoming of her background. If this mysterious Alchemy Master turns out to be the real deal, it would benefit the Cai Clan greatly if the Alchemy Master adores someone from their family.

In fact, there were plenty of other families in the Assembly Hall that had brought along their daughter to the gathering, all hoping to create a connection with the Alchemy Master whose name already rivals most of the top families in the Eastern Continent.

"Look over there. That's Matriarch Fang from the Four Great Families."

The people there quickly noticed Fang Xianjue's immense presence.

"Of course, one of the Four Great Families would be here. I wouldn't be surprised even if the other three also decide to show up."

And just as many there had expected, the other three Great Families appeared at the Assembly Hall a little bit later.

The Long Family that governs the Eastern Region, the Xiang Family that rules the Southern Region, the Fang Family that dominates the Western Region, and the Su Family from the Northern Region — all Four

Great Families were gathered in public. It was an incredibly rare sight even for most of these influential people at the Assembly Hall who are used to seeing uncommon events.

As for the number of people from these families, the Long Family only brought one person — their Patriarch. The Xiang Family brought two individuals from their family — an old woman and a young lady. As for the Fang Family, there were two people, Fang Xianjue and a handsome middle-aged man, who was her husband and the head of the Fang Family. Meanwhile, just like the Long Family, only Su Xun from the Su Family showed up.

However, despite sharing the same title of a 'Great Family', none of these families were actually friendly with one another. In fact, they inwardly hated each other and would fight with each other over the smallest thing.

Sometime later, another renowned family that caused a commotion with their appearance showed up in the Assembly Hall. However, this family was not always that popular, as their fame had only skyrocketed after the Regional Tournament because of one individual.

"Look! That's the Hong Family! And they even brought along Hong Yu'er!"

The people there were surprised by Hong Yu'er's unexpected appearance.

Very quickly after Hong Yu'er's appearance, people gathered around her, hoping to gain some favors or just to make some connections.

However, Hong Yu'er didn't even glance at them before taking a seat beside Su Xun.

"Hello, father-in-law." Hong Yu'er greeted Su Xun, dumbfounding him.

Meanwhile, her father, Hong Chengchou, had to apologize to the experts and seniors in her stead.

"I apologize for my daughter's unruly behavior just now. She's not used to strangers..." Hong Chengchou bowed to them.

"Hahaha... don't worry about it. Geniuses like her should be at least that haughty." The experts laughed it off, as they didn't dare to complain before Hong Yu'er's presence.

"What are you doing here, Hong Yu'er? Are you interested in the pills or the Alchemy Master?" Su Xun asked her with raised eyebrows.

Hong Yu'er showed a smile and said, "You don't have to worry, father-in-law. Even if he's the most talented Alchemy Master in this world, I only have eyes for Su Yang."

"I'm sorry, but it was not my intention to question your loyalty for my son..." Su Xun quickly shook his head.

Sometime later, a loud voice resounded in the place.

"His Majesty, Lord Xie, has arrived!"

The people in the Assembly Hall immediately stood up and bowed to Lord Xie, who'd just entered the room.

"Be at ease." Lord Xie waved his hands before taking a seat in his personal chair.

Once Lord Xie and all of the expected guests had arrived, Wang Shuren made her appearance with a bright smile on her face.

### **Chapter 566 Live Demonstration**

When Wang Shuren made her appearance, the entire Assembly Hall became silent, and the only thing that could be heard were the beating hearts of these excited experts.

"Welcome to the Alchemy Gathering. I am Wang Shuren, a Pill Master from the Burning Lotus Sect, and I will be assisting my Master in today's event." Wang Shuren spoke to the people there with elegance, instantly catching their attention. It was something she'd learned after many years of experience working at the Burning Lotus Auction House.

"First and foremost, I would like to express our gratitude to everyone here for taking the time to participate in this gathering. I know there are many questions in your mind at this moment, but I request all of you to extend your patience a little bit further, as my Master would like to have a 'word' with everyone here."

Wang Shuren retrieved her storage ring and placed a cauldron in the middle of the room before stepping to the side.

A few moments later, Su Yang, who was still clad in black alchemy robes and wearing a mask, slowly walked onto the stage.

"That's the Alchemy Master who discovered the Earth Advancement Pill? What an extraordinary aura he exudes!"

"He's even more exalted than I'd expected!"

All of the experts there began breathing heavily upon feeling Su Yang's immense pressure, feeling as though they were in the presence of an almighty being.

And with every step Su Yang took, the people there panted even harder.

'What a show-off...' Hong Yu'er smiled to herself after seeing Su Yang's grand appearance.

After making his appearance, Su Yang walked straight to the cauldron in the middle of the room and sat before it, not even bothering to glance at the spectators.

A moment later, he waved his sleeves, surrounding the cauldron with fierce alchemy flames.

"What a powerful and beautiful flame!"

"I have never seen someone with such peerless control over their alchemy flames! Just how many years does it take for one to achieve such perfection?!"

The Alchemy Experts there were instantly mesmerized by the fierce flames that danced around the cauldron as though it was alive, especially Su Yang's ability to control the flames as though they were no different than the fingers on his hands.



A few seconds later, when the cauldron was fully heated, Wang Shuren carried a tray of ingredients to Su Yang.

"What? Does he intend on concocting a pill before so many Alchemy Masters? Is he not worried that we might steal the recipe for ourselves?"

The Pill Masters there were dumbfounded by Su Yang's decision to concoct pills before so many experts, as it was no different than cooking a family recipe while being surrounded by many world-renowned chefs that were watching his every movement.

They weren't sure if it was plain stupidity or pure boldness, but either way, these Alchemy Masters couldn't be happier to see what kind of pill Su Yang's going to create with those ingredients.

However, before the Alchemy Masters could even get a good look at the ingredients that were bundled together like a pile of leaves, Su Yang tossed the entire tray of ingredients into the cauldron.

"What on earth?!"

The Alchemy Masters there were shocked speechless by Su Yang's actions, as it was basic knowledge and plain common sense to throw in one ingredient at a time. Unless one could multitask and purify each ingredient individually at once, it was nigh impossible to concoct a pill with such a bizarre method. However, who could possibly achieve such a feat that none of these renowned Alchemy Masters would even dare to imagine doing?

In fact, in the history of pill making, the most ingredients a Pill Master had ever purified at once was 3 ingredients, yet Su Yang had tossed in over a dozen ingredients at once without hesitation.

'If we cannot watch him toss the ingredients inside the cauldron, then all we need to do is look inside the cauldron and watch him purify and mix the ingredients one at a time!'

The Alchemy Masters there quickly thought of a solution and immediately concentrated their spiritual sense inside the cauldron.

However, by the time these Alchemy Masters could see the contents inside the cauldron, Su Yang had already purified and mixed all of the ingredients, and it took him less than ten seconds to achieve such a feat.

"What?! He purified and mixed over a dozen ingredients in only a few seconds?! Impossible!"

When the Alchemy Masters realized what was going on, they all stood up from their seats with shock and disbelief written all over their faces.

Meanwhile, the people that had no experience in Alchemy were startled and confused by these Alchemy Masters' reactions, as they couldn't comprehend what was so impressive about the scene.

However, a few moments later, when Su Yang opened the cauldron and retrieved the pill inside, even the people that knew nothing about Alchemy were shocked that the pill had been created in such a short time, as all of them had expected it to take at least a few hours.

After a long time of silence, someone exclaimed loudly, "Impossible! He concocted a pill in less than a minute?! I don't believe it! This must be a setup that they had prepared beforehand!"

Once somebody expressed their doubt, more Alchemy Masters began voicing their suspicions, as Su Yang's abilities were simply too shocking and unbelievable in their eyes.

Seeing the doubtful crowd and hearing their complaints, Wang Shuren stepped forward and spoke, "Although it may be a hard pill to swallow, what you have witnessed just is not an act. I can assure you that my Master's abilities are the real deal."

"However, if you are not satisfied with my words, you can come and inspect the cauldron for yourselves. If there is any evidence of faking the demonstration just now, then we will give you the recipe for the Earth Advancement Pills."

"What?! Really?!"

The Alchemy Masters did not dare to waste time and immediately approached the cauldron after hearing Wang Shuren's words.

However, no matter how much time they spent looking, even after searching every nook and cranny of the cauldron, these Alchemy Masters were unable to find anything suspicious with the cauldron.

If the demonstration had been faked and the pill that came out of the cauldron was prepared beforehand, there should still be the ingredients that he'd tossed inside. And even if Su Yang burned the ingredients until there was nothing left, there would still be some evidence of that left behind.

But alas, the cauldron was completely clean, and there was no sign of the demonstration being faked.

Once the Alchemy Masters realized that fact, they all looked at Su Yang with nervous expressions on their faces, as his abilities had scared them.

"We deeply apologize for doubting your abilities, Senior Pill Master!"

The Alchemy Masters bowed and apologized to him afterward.

Su Yang suddenly raised his hand and spoke in a disguised voice that was deeper than his original voice with a mysterious feeling to it, "Anyone would doubt something they have never seen before, so I don't blame any of you for doubting my abilities. In fact, if you still doubt my abilities, why don't you inspect the pill that I'd just concocted? Even a beginner Pill Master that only knows of the basics should be able to tell when a Pill is created."

Su Yang extended his hands and showed them the pill resting on his palms.

"T-This is the Earth Advancement Pill! And it's purer than all of the ones being sold in the market!"

"This quality of pill is higher than any high-quality pills I have seen before... So what does that mean for this pill? What's even higher than a high-quality pill? A perfect-quality pill?"

Despite seeing all of the best pills in this world before, the Alchemy Masters was having trouble holding back the saliva in their mouth after seeing the flawless-quality pill for the first time in their lives.

"This fresh aroma... there's no doubt that this pill just came out of a cauldron. Even if we do not want to believe it, we cannot ignore pure facts." Senior Zeng, the top Alchemy Master there expressed his thoughts.

Sometime later, once all of the Alchemy Masters there had a chance to inspect the pill, Wang Shuren spoke, "Now that everyone is crystal clear about my Master's abilities, let's return to our seats and continue with the gathering, shall we?"

Although the Alchemy Masters were reluctant to part with the flawless-quality pill, they nodded their heads and eventually returned to their seats.

Once everyone had returned to their seats, Su Yang spoke, "I did not demonstrate my abilities just to flaunt my abilities, nor was it to dismiss the abilities of the Alchemy Masters in this place. Instead, the purpose of my demonstration is to broaden your views of Alchemy. What you witnessed today is only the surface of the ocean known as Alchemy, and I have gathered all of you today to hopefully increase your knowledge."

### **Chapter 567 Desperate for the Heaven Transcendence Pill**

"You want to increase our knowledge in Alchemy?" The Alchemy Masters there exchanged glances, seemingly puzzled by his objective, as they do not see any advantage in doing such a thing.

"Excuse me for being blunt, but what is your purpose for doing something that does not benefit yourself? What do you really want from all of this?" Lord Xie suddenly spoke with a sharp gaze, asking Su Yang the question in everyone's mind right now.

While it may benefit the Alchemy Masters of this world to gain more knowledge and perhaps even skills, it does not appear to benefit Su Yang. In fact, doing such a thing would only bring him the opposite of benefits.

A mysterious smile appeared behind his mask, and he spoke, "You are right. I gain nothing by doing this, nor am I expecting anything in return. I am simply doing as I please because I pity this place."

"You... pity us? Can you elaborate on that, Senior?" Lord Xie raised his eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

Su Yang nodded and spoke in a slow but clear voice, "When I first arrived at the Eastern Continent and saw the low quality of the pills here, I was shocked by how inexperienced the Alchemy Masters are in this place, and as a fellow Alchemy Master, I felt pity. Therefore, I want to share some of my knowledge, hopefully making this place a better place for all Alchemy Masters."

"W-Wait a minute... when you 'first arrived' here? D-Does this mean that you are from another Continent?" Lord Xie asked him with a shocked expression.

Because of the Jade Sea that separates each Continent and the powerful underwater beings that are always aggressive towards humans, people would rarely risk their lives to travel to another Continent.

In fact, even Lord Xie, one of the most powerful Cultivators in the Eastern Continent, hasn't been to another Continent, and only his father, Xie Wang, has experienced the other Continents.

Seeing Lord Xie's surprised expression, Su Yang nodded and spoke, "I am from a place where you people refer as the 'Holy Central Continent'."

"What?! The Holy Central Continent?!"

Many experts there immediately stood up from shock, including Lord Xie.

"So the Holy Central Continent truly exists! And here I thought it was only a legend!"

"Unbelievable! This explains why his skills are vastly superior compared to us — almost otherworldly!"

The experts there expressed their disbelief.

"A-Are you truly from the Holy Central Continent, Senior?" Lord Xie asked him for confirmation.

Su Yang nodded and spoke, "If you don't believe me, why don't I tell you a little bit about the Holy Central Continent?"

Su Yang proceeded to recall his experience at the Holy Central Continent, mostly talking about the Three Ancient Academies.

"In fact, I plan on returning to the Holy Central Continent soon. When that happens, I wouldn't mind bringing along some company."

When the people there heard Su Yang's words, they all stared at him in silence, before the place exploded into an uproar.

Sometime later, Lord Xie spoke, "I will be eternally grateful if I really get to witness the Holy Central Continent before I die, but how do you plan on taking us there? The Jade Sea... it's too risky."

"Naturally, if I have a way to get here safely, I would have a way to return safely. However, I don't want to ruin the fun, so I won't answer any more than that." Su Yang responded.

A few moments later, he continued, "Anyway, I did not gather all of you here today to talk about the Holy Central Continent."

His sharp gaze then swept the place, and he spoke in a serious voice, "The Earth Advancement Pill that I'd revealed some time ago was only the beginning — an introduction of sorts."

He then waved his sleeves, causing four pills to appear and float before the spectators, and continued to speak, "I have with me here four pills that will make the Earth Advancement Pill a humble pill."

"Starting from your left, we have the Profound Qi Gathering Pill, Hundred Days Pill, Heaven and Earth Restoration Pill, and finally, the Heaven Transcendence Pill."

Su Yang proceeded to explain the effects of each pill.

"Consuming the Profound Qi Gathering Pill will increase your Cultivation speed by 100% for 12 hours. The Hundreds Days Pill will instantly increase your Cultivation base as much as you would have cultivated in 100 days, but it can only be consumed once every four years. The Heaven and Earth Restoration Pill can restore even a peak Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivator's depleted spiritual energy within seconds."

"And for the last pill, the Heaven Transcendence Pill... just like the Earth Advancement Pill, it will have a high chance of advancing someone at the peak of the Earth Spirit Realm to the Heavenly Spirit Realm depending on the pill's quality. At the highest quality, it has a 100% success rate, meaning any Earth Spirit Realm Cultivators have a chance to reach the Heavenly Spirit Realm regardless of their talent."

"..."

The entire Assembly Hall was dead silent, as they were all trying to process and comprehend what Su Yang had just said.

"A-Are you saying that if I consume the Heaven Transcendence Pill that I can enter the Heavenly Spirit Realm?!"

The first one to speak with Fang Xianjue, who stood up with her gaze fixated on the Heaven Transcendence Pill, her eyes filled with hope. After being stuck in the peak of the Earth Spirit Realm for over 30 years, she was starting to lose hope that she could ever reach the Heavenly Spirit Realm. However, with the appearance of the Heavenly Transcendence Pill, her passion to enter the Heavenly Spirit Realm has reemerged.

Seeing Fang Xianjue's enthusiasm, he nodded, "That's right. The Heavenly Transcendence Pill in my hands right now happens to be of the highest quality, so you are guaranteed to enter the Heavenly Spirit Realm if you consume it."

"W-Would it be possible to sell me that pill, Senior?! I have been stuck at the Earth Spirit Realm for many decades! Please! I am willing to pay any price for the pill!" Fang Xianjue did not mind losing face before so many experts and pleaded Su Yang in a desperate voice.

"Any price?" Su Yang asked her.

"That's right! I am from the Fang Family, one of the Four Great Families! You can name any amount!"

Hearing her confident voice, Su Yang nodded and raised three fingers towards her direction.

"Three million spirit stones? I will immediately have it prepared for you!" Fang Xianjue spoke with excitement.

However, Su Yang shook his head and spoke, "Are you underestimating the value of the Heavenly Transcendence Pill? A single Earth Advancement Pill is already worth hundreds of thousands of spirit stones."

And he continued, "If I were to allow anyone in this room to buy the pill for three million spirit stones, who would be willing?"

Immediately after Su Yang's question ended, everybody in the room raised their hand.

"Forget 3 million spirit stones! I am willing to pay even 5 million spirit stones!"

"I can pay 10 million spirit stones for the Heavenly Transcendence Pill! I have also been stuck in the Earth Spirit Realm for over 20 years!"

"T-Thirty million spirit stones! I will pay thirty million spirit stones!" Fang Xianjue suddenly shouted, dumbfounding the people there, even her own husband, who stared at her with wide eyes.

"Would that be enough for the Heavenly Transcendence Pill?" she asked him with a pained expression, as thirty million spirit stones would hurt even the Fang Family's finances.

However, she was hellbent on reaching the Heavenly Spirit Realm. Even if she had to sell an arm and leg, she would still buy the Heavenly Transcendence Pill.

"Thirty million spirit stones, huh?" Su Yang pretended to ponder for a moment before nodding his head, "Very well. I shall part with this pill for thirty million spirit stones."

And he continued, "And to prove to the others that the pill is real, I will let you consume the pill and breakthrough to the Heavenly Spirit Realm here."

"Y-You want me to consume the pill right now?" Fang Xianjue looked at him with surprise.

"That's right. Don't worry, I will ensure your safety while you cultivate. And it shouldn't take longer than a few minutes, anyway."

Fang Xianjue did not doubt his words and immediately approached him.

Before handing the Heaven Transcendence Pill to her, Su Yang spoke in a casual voice, "Just in case you plan on avoiding payment afterward, I have what it takes to completely erase the Fang Family, great family or not."

Fang Xianjue trembled at his words, and she showed him a reassuring smile, "I wouldn't even dare imagine trying to steal from Esteemed Senior, especially when there are so many witnesses here. Even if I have to sell my body to pay you the thirty million spirit stones, I swear upon the Fang Family that I will repay the debt."

"Good." Su Yang nodded and handed her the pill.

### **Chapter 568 Three Disciples**

Fang Xianjue held the Heaven Transcendence Pill with trembling hands, her expression almost as though she was looking at her newborn.

After clearing her mind and calming her excitement, Fang Xianjue sat in the middle of the room in the lotus position, before she slowly tossed the pill in her mouth.

Once the Heaven Transcendence Pill touched her tongue, it melted as though it became water, before sliding down her throat.

A refreshing and cool sensation filled Fang Xianjue's stomach, and the Profound Qi in her Dantian immediately began to transfer.

A few minutes later, a ripple that carried the essence of the Heavenly Spirit Realm swept the room, shocking everybody there.

"Heavens! The Heaven Transcendence Pill is real!"

"This pill... just like the Earth Advancement Pill, it's going to shake the cultivation world but even more intensively!"

"With the Earth Advancement Pill and the Heaven Transcendence Pill, reaching the Heavenly Spirit Realm will no longer be just a dream! The Cultivation World is going to usher into a new era!"

After reaching the Heavenly Spirit Real, Wang Xianjue silently stared at her hands, seemingly in a daze.

To think that she'd be able to reach the Heavenly Spirit Realm when she'd already lost all hope. It was truly a miracle.

Once she'd calmed down, Fang Xianjue kowtowed to Su Yang and spoke in a respectful tone, "I cannot thank you enough, Senior. It's not an exaggeration to say that you've saved my life. If I didn't breakthrough into the Heavenly Spirit Realm, I would've died after a few more decades. But now that I have ascended into a new realm, I can live for another three hundred years."

Su Yang remained nonchalant and spoke, "I hope you didn't forget after breaking through, but I did not give you the Heaven Transcendence Pill for free. Those 30 million spirit stones, you have one month pay the debt, or I will personally come knocking at your door."

"I wouldn't dare forget. Even if I have to slave away my body or sell my limbs, I will repay this debt."

Su Yang nodded, "Once you have the spirit stones, you can give them to my disciple, Wang Shuren. You can find her at the Burning Lotus Sect."

When Fang Xianjue returned to her seat sometime later, Su Yang spoke, "Now that all of you have witnessed for yourselves the effect of the Heaven Transcendence Pill, do you have any questions for me?"

A few individuals immediately raised their hands.

"If you don't mind me asking... where on earth did you discover such a divine pill? Or does this pill already exist in the Holy Central Continent?"

Su Yang shook his head and said, "As of this moment, the Heaven Transcendence Pill only exists in the Eastern Continent. Even the Holy Central Continent does not know of its existence. As for where I obtained the recipe for this pill... let's just say that I have been to places that you cannot even comprehend."

Sometime later, Lord Xie asked him, "If there are pills that can help one reach the Earth Spirit Realm and the Heavenly Spirit Realm, do you think there exists a pill that has the effect to help one reach the Sovereign Spirit Realm?"

"..."

The entire room waited for Su Yang's response anxiously.

And after a long moment of silence, Su Yang finally spoke, "Perhaps."

Of course, such a pill exists. However, that kind of pill is only available in the Four Divine Heavens. The ingredients required to concoct that pill exceed tens of thousands of years old, something that couldn't possibly exist in a world that's less than ten thousand years old.

After spending many minutes answering questions, Su Yang moved onto the next topic.

"Now that I have answered all of your questions, allow me to talk about the main subject."

He swept the crowd with a sharp gaze, and he spoke, "I am going to accept three disciples from this Continent, and I am going to teach them how to concoct the Earth Advancement Pill and all of the pills I have shared today."

"What?!"

The people there expressed shock upon hearing his words.

"I don't care how old you are, nor do I care about your gender. I will be hosting an exam weeks from now, and if you pass my exam, I shall accept you as my disciple."

"Do you have any questions?"

Almost everybody in the Assembly Hall raised their hands.

"Senior! Who will be allowed to take your exam?!"

"Anyone." Su Yang quickly responded. "I will give everyone here a chance to take the exam, and if you know someone who has talent in Alchemy, you can also bring them to take the exam. However, since I do not want to spend too much time with this, I will limit every Family and Sect here to two participants."

The place immediately became filled with noise.

"Who do you think we should send from our family?"

"But nobody in the family knows anything about Alchemy..."

"Didn't you hear Senior? We are not limited to people from our own family! As long as we bring two people, no matter where they are from, they can take the exam!"

"..."

"Disciple Yong should definitely have one of those two spots, as his knowledge with Alchemy is definitely the best among the disciples."

"Although I don't doubt that he's the best among the disciples, there are many Sect Elders that are better than him! Age is not limited in the exam, so we should bring the best within the Sect!"

"..."

"What do you think, my daughter? Would you like to partake in the exam with me? Even though you are the youngest, your talents in Alchemy are the best the Cai Family has ever seen!"

"I would be honored to have a chance to become Senior's disciple."

"Then it's decided."

"..."

"Master... would you become that Senior's disciple if you had the chance?"



"Even though I am regarded as the number one Alchemist in the Eastern Continent, I am no different than a baby in the Senior's eyes. And despite my age, I will gladly become a disciple again if my Master is someone like the Senior."

"What about you? I won't blame you if you want to leave me and become Senior's disciple instead. After all, I want what's best for you."

"I will follow Master wherever he goes."

"Very well... then let us both partake in the exam."

While everyone was in a commotion, Wang Shuren said to Su Yang in a joking voice, "Am I not enough to satisfy you, Master?"

Su Yang smiled behind his mask and spoke, "You are a very diligent and talented disciple, but I doubt you'll have any time to practice your own techniques once the news of these pills start spreading outside of this place. Therefore, I am going to find a few more disciples who'll help you out. Furthermore, even if I leave this world, there'll be a few people who can continue what I started here."

Sometime later, Su Yang said to the crowd, "Although it was short, that's all I have for you today. In two weeks, I will return to this place for the exam."

Very quickly, the people began to leave the Assembly Hall, as they were in a hurry to find two participants for the exam, especially those that know very little about Alchemy.

Sometime later, only Lord Xie remained in the Assembly Hall.

He approached Su Yang and bowed to him, "You have opened my eyes today, Senior. It appears that I am still a frog in a well despite my status in the Eastern Continent. However, I still have one question for the Senior. How should I address you?"

"...My surname is Xiao." Su Yang responded with a mysterious smile behind his mask.

"Allow me to thank you again, Senior Xiao, for assisting the Eastern Continent." Lord Xie bowed to him again.

And he continued, "If you have the time, I would like to invite you to dinner back at my house. Perhaps we could talk more about your plans at that time."

However, Su Yang shook his head and spoke in a calm voice, "I will apologize in advance as my words may offend you, but I would rather not show preferences for one family over the others, regardless of your stature in this place, as that would be unfair to the others. If you want to talk with me on a more personal level, then you will have to pass my exam and become my disciple."

"I see... I will also apologize for putting Senior Xiao on the spot. However, if you ever change your mind, the Xie Family will always have our doors open for you." Although Lord Xie felt disappointed by the results, he did not dare to complain, as he was afraid of offending this mysterious Senior, who did not hesitate to threaten the Fang Family in front of everyone — including the Xie Family, ruler of the Eastern Continent.

## **Chapter 569 Patience**

After everyone had left the Assembly Hall beside Su Yang and Wang Shuren, they returned to the Burning Lotus Sect to prepare for the Alchemy Examination in two weeks.

"What kind of exam are you going to make them take? Will it be something like the Profound Blossom Sect's disciple assessment?" Wang Shuren asked him.

"Not really. While talent is an important factor in Alchemy, even more important is their dedication and ability to remember things. Without dedication, even if you have the world's finest talent, you won't be able to concoct pills properly. And there are thousands of pill recipes that exist in this world with the number of ingredients a hundred times more than recipes itself. Without a good memory, how will you memorize what ingredients are needed for the pills, much less how to concoct the pill? While some pills may require similar ingredients, the way to concoct each pill is unique and vastly different."

"Therefore, I am going to test their ability to memorize pill recipes and have them undergo a test of patience."

"Testing their patience...?" Wang Shuren raised her eyebrows. "While I can see how the first exam will go about, I cannot imagine how you plan on testing their patience."

"It's simple, really."

Su Yang suddenly entered the pill room and began concocting a pill.

A few minutes later, he returned to Wang Shuren's side and showed her a pebble-sized pill.

"What kind of pill is this?" she asked him with her eyes flickering with interest and excitement.

Su Yang merely smiled and said, "Take a seat and close your eyes. I'll let you experience it for yourself."

"..."

Wang Shuren narrowed her eyes at him with a suspicious gaze. She could feel an ominous feeling coming from the smile on Su Yang's face, but she was too curious about the pill to refuse.

A moment later, she sat on the floor in the lotus position and closed her eyes.

Seeing this, Su Yang crushed the purple pill between his fingers and scattered the powder on Wang Shuren's face.

"..."

"..."

"..."

After waiting for many minutes without anything happening, Wang Shuren spoke, "What is taking you so long, Su Yang?"

"..."

"..."

"..."

However, nobody responded to her.

"Su Yang?"

Wang Shuren slowly opened her eyes, and it was at that moment she realized why Su Yang did not respond to her.

"W-Where am I?"

Wang Shuren had opened her eyes to find out that she was no longer inside her house or the Burning Lotus Sect for that matter.

Instead, she had been transported onto a mountain cliff in the middle of nowhere with mountains that were taller than even the clouds in all directions.

How did she suddenly get transported to this place without realizing it? Where the hell is this location?

"Ah... this must be an illusion..."

Wang Shuren shook her head with a smile on her face. "You almost got me, Su Yang. Even though this is clearly an illusion caused by the pill, I must admit, it's unbelievably realistic. If I didn't know about the pill, I would've definitely been fooled by it."

Wang Shuren decided to sit around until the effect of the pill wears off or when Su Yang pulls her out of the illusion.

However, after waiting for many hours, she remained in the exact same place, surrounded by mountains and clouds. But despite this, Wang Shuren remained calm, as she was confident that she was inside an illusion.

Ten hours... twenty hours... three days... seven days...

An entire week had passed by in the blink of an eye, yet Wang Shuren did not wake up from the illusion.

"Haha... I see what you are trying to do, Su Yang..." A smile appeared on her face when she realized what was happening.

"You are trying to test my patience, huh? Very well. I shall wait until you are satisfied!"

Thus, Wang Shuren continued to sit on the mountain cliff, patiently waiting for the 'test' to be over.

One week... two weeks... three weeks...

Wang Shuren has sat in the same position for a month by now, but the effects of the pills still remain, as she could see the mountain range.

"I don't know how long have passed since I arrived here, but it should be weeks. How long are you going to keep me here, Su Yang?" Wang Shuren said out loud, and her voice echoed into the distance.

"..."

Hearing no response, Wang Shuren stood up for the first time and sighed, "Since it's like this, I might as well look around. Maybe I'll leave the illusion if I wander far enough."

With that in mind, Wang Shuren left the mountain cliff and began traveling around the mountain range.

The surroundings were extremely silent, almost like she was the only living being in this world. However, that was to be expected, as she was inside an illusion created by the purple pill.

"Even though I have already expressed my admiration, the pill's ability to create such a realistic illusion is too baffling, even becoming more and more realistic the longer I remain in this place."

Wang Shuren proceeded to traverse the mountain range, but after spending a few more days in the illusion, she realized that she had been walking in the same area no matter which direction she walked or how far she walked because, in the end, she would return to the same mountain cliff from the beginning.

"Is this really an illusion...?" Wang Shuren began to doubt herself after spending a few more weeks in the place.

"I should have realized this when I first arrived in this place, but I have overlooked it... Why is there spiritual energy in an illusion? Is it even possible to create real spiritual energy inside an illusion?"

Wang Shuren started to cultivate to test the spiritual energy, and as she'd expected, she was able to cultivate normally with the Profound Qi in this place despite being in an illusion, which is the beginning of her doubts for this place.

"Well... since I can cultivate the spiritual energy in this place, it'll make waiting much easier..."

Thus, Wang Shuren returned to the mountain cliff where the spiritual energy was the densest, and she began cultivating there.

One month... two months... three months... six months... one year...

In the blink of an eye, over an entire year had passed since Wang Shuren was transported to this mountain range, yet there was no sign of her returning to her room in the Burning Lotus Sect anytime soon.

Two years... three years... five years... ten years...

Wang Shuren has increased her cultivation base by two whole levels within these two years, but without being able to concoct any pills for so long, she was beginning to miss the smell of medicine and sweating until her robes were soaked from concocting pills.

"Su Yang! Are you done testing me?! I am tired of seeing this same scenery for so many years! Please! Just let me leave already!" Wang Shuren shouted at the top of her lungs towards the Heavens.

However, there was no response from Su Yang no matter how long she waited.

"I guess it's not easy trying to satisfy an Immortal who has lived for thousands of years..." she sighed afterward. If she thought about it, she was incredibly lucky to have an Immortal like Su Yang lecturing her.

"I may not be a real disciple in his eyes right now, but I will prove to him that I have the capabilities to become one!" Wang Shuren resolved herself to wait for as long as she could possibly endure.

Fifteen years... thirty years... fifty years... one hundred years...

After spending one hundred years in the same place, Wang Shuren was beginning to go crazy. When she first entered this place, she was only at Earth Spirit Realm. But after spending 100 years in cultivation, she has ascended to the peak of the Earth Spirit Realm, being only a step away from the Heavenly Spirit Realm.

"I can feel it... I should be entering the Heavenly Spirit Realm in a few days..."

A few days of preparation later, Wang Shuren began her ascension to the Heavenly Spirit Realm.

Many hours later, she could feel her Dantian expanding many folds, and her spiritual energy was growing denser and purer.

"I did it! I have finally reached the Heavenly Spirit Realm!"

Wang Shuren shouted in excitement as she opened her eyes.

However, it was at that moment she realized that she was no longer in the mountain range, and Su Yang's handsome face could be seen standing a few meters away from her.

"S-Su Yang...?" she mumbled in a dazed voice, seemingly in disbelief.

"Congratulations, you have managed to endure 100 years of solitude without your mind breaking." Su Yang said to her with a smile, and he continued, "Even though you have experienced 100 years with the pill's effect, in reality, only 10 hours have passed since you closed your eyes."

"Eh?" Wang Shuren stared at him with wide eyes, speechless from shock.

### **Chapter 570 Everlasting Time Pill**

"W-W-What do you mean only ten hours have passed...?" Wang Shuren asked him in a dumbfounded voice.

"The pill I made you experience is called the Everlasting Time Pill. Anyone affected by the pill will be entrapped within their own consciousness while feeling as though they are still in reality. It's akin to having a really long dream, but your mind is awake the entire time. From where I am from, the Everlasting Time Pill is commonly used on prisoners as a form of punishment. Of course, there are other uses as well, such as testing the mental fortitude of an individual." Su Yang explained to her.

"So... while you may have lived for a hundred years inside your mind, in reality, only ten hours have passed since the beginning."

After a long moment of silence, Wang Shuren mumbled in a low voice, "Then... all of my achievements... were just in my head — a mere dream? I did not really live a hundred years? And all the effort I'd put into reaching the Heavenly Spirit Realm... was all fake?"

Once she realized the truth, tears began flowing down her face, and she spoke in a trembling voice, "Even though it was just a test, this was very cruel of you, Su Yang... What did I do to deserve this?"

Seeing her reaction and watching tears flow down her beautiful face, Su Yang felt a little bit guilty for testing her. However, it was not as though he wanted to punish her or make her cry.

"I'm sorry for making you endure such a trial without any warning, but I truly believed that you'd benefit greatly from it. If you'd known about it in advance, then it would've been pointless."

"What do you mean I have benefited from this...?" Wang Shuren slowly wiped her tears and asked him.

"Although what you have experienced in your mind was fake, it is also real simultaneously," he said to her.

"Go ahead and try to cultivate."

"Right now?"

Seeing Su Yang nod his head, Wang Shuren immediately began cultivating, and to her surprise, it was much easier and natural than before, almost as though she'd been doing this for many decades.

"Because of the Everlasting Time Pill, your mental strength has increased tremendously, and the time you'd spent cultivating inside your mind, all of that experience you'd gathered during that time is real. Therefore, you've essentially lived for 100 years in the last ten hours, but your physical body remains unchanged."

"Eh?! Won't that make the Everlasting Time Pill an incredibly powerful and priceless treasure?!" Wang Shuren expressed shock.

"Depending on how you use it, yes, it can become a powerful treasure for training others. However, most of the time, that is not the case, because only extremely skillful Alchemists are able to concoct Everlasting Time Pills that will have an effect of over a hundred years. In fact, most Alchemists would only be able to make the pill last for a few years at most. Furthermore, you cannot consume this pill very often, or it'll greatly burden your mind, even breaking it at times."

"The most one can consume the Everlasting Time Pill is once every one thousand years. Therefore, it's mostly used to torture the minds of criminals from where I'm from."

Wang Shuren stared at him with wide eyes, and she spoke with an admiring tone, "I knew you were someone impressive, but to think you would be this crazy!"

Su Yang laughed at her words and said, "That's only natural, as I was personally trained by the Alchemy God. However, compared to the Alchemy God, my skills are still too green. For example, I can create 10,000 Years Everlasting Time Pills at most, whilst the Alchemy God can concoct 100,000 Years Everlasting Time Pills."

"100,000 Years Everlasting Time Pill?! Does this mean you would live for 100,000 years inside your mind?! Did you consume such a pill in your previous life by any chance?!" Wang Shuren's eyes widened with disbelief.

Su Yang nodded. "In fact, I have consumed a few of them before."

Wang Shuren stared at him silently for a good minute before asking him in a low voice, "How old are you, exactly?"

"Asking Immortals with a young appearance about their real age is akin to asking any woman about their age; it's quite impolite." Su Yang responded with a smile.

Wang Shuren was speechless. Do Immortals really find that kind of thing disrespectful?

"Anyway, do you have any more questions regarding the Everlasting Time Pill?"

"Well... it's not exactly about the pill itself, but it's definitely Alchemy related..." she spoke with a hesitant gaze.

"What is it?"

"If I followed you back to your world... Do you think I would be able to meet this Alchemy God someday? If this person claims to be the Alchemy God, he must be the best Alchemy Master in the world, right? I would like to see for myself just what the peak of Alchemy looks like for once before I die..."

Su Yang looked at her with a surprised face, before laughing out loud a moment later, "Hahaha... if you so desperately want to meet the Alchemy God that you'd be willing to leave this world, then I am willing to personally set up a meeting for you! And just so you know, the Alchemy God is not a 'he' but a 'she'."

"What?!" Wang Shuren explained loudly, her expression filled with shock.

"The Alchemy God is a woman?!"

Su Yang nodded with a smile and said, "Not only is she a woman, but she's also an incredibly beautiful one at that."

"A-Are you... and the Alchemy God... by any chance..." Wang Shuren asked him in a trembling voice.

A mysterious smile appeared on Su Yang's face, and she responded in a calm voice, "Who knows. If you are that interested, you should ask the Alchemy God about it yourself."

"I-I wouldn't dare..." she quickly shook her head, causing Su Yang to burst out laughing at her response.

"Well, you still have two years to decide whether you truly want to follow me or remain in this world. If you decide to follow me, you will not only be able to concoct pills you've never even heard of before but you'll also experience a whole new world of Alchemy."

Wang Shuren swallowed nervously, feeling extremely tempted by his words.

"I will let you know when I have come to a decision," she said to him.

Sometime later, Su Yang began training Wang Shuren again.

However, because it has been over a hundred years since she last experienced pill making, Wang Shuren's movements were awkward and stiff.

With that being said, because of the Everlasting Time Pill, her mental strength has increased significantly, allowing her to relearn everything at an extreme rate, even surpassing her old self just a few days later.

"What do you think? Are you still angry at me for testing you?" Su Yang asked her with a smile on his face afterward.

"Do you even need to ask that question? Even though it was cruel of you to make me experience 100 years of solitude, I understand why you did it. I was feeling more disheartened than angry that my 100

years of effort had turned out to be a mere dream. However, after seeing the benefits, I am beginning to feel grateful instead. It's almost like I've been reborn with better talent than previously. Perhaps my efforts weren't wasted, after all." Wang Shuren spoke as she stared at her hands with a dazed gaze and a gentle smile on her face.

"That's good to hear. And now that you are comfortable with Alchemy again, it's time to resume your special training." Su Yang said.

Wang Shuren looked at him with a puzzled expression for a moment before she finally recalled what this 'special training' was.

"Even though it hasn't been that long in reality, I feel like it has been forever since you last touched my body." Wang Shuren spoke before loosening her robes.

"As an apology for making you go through that experience, I'll satisfy your body with 100 years worth of pleasure." Su Yang said, before retrieving a bed from his storage ring and tossing it on the floor.

"O-One hundred years worth of pleasure...? I-I will die from that!" Wang Shuren exclaimed with a terrified expression.

"Hahaha... don't worry, your mental strength has increased enough to endure it."

A few moments later, Su Yang enveloped Wang Shuren in his embrace and began pounding his shaft into her body, causing her large and perky mountains to jiggle vigorously.

"Ahhhhn!"

After experiencing 100 years without feeling any pleasure, Wang Shuren's body trembled with delight she has never felt before, almost as though her body was deprived of pleasure, and her lower lips continuously gushed with Yin Qi as a response, letting Su Yang know of her satisfaction.

"Mmmm~!"

"Ahhhn!"

"Ooooh~!"

And for the entire week, Su Yang and Wang Shuren passionately cultivated with each other in the pill room, relieving Wang Shuren of all her stress from her 100 years of solitude and loneliness.

### **Chapter 571 Alchemy Examination**

Two weeks have passed in the blink of an eye, and on the day of the Alchemy Examination, Wang Shuren wobbled out of her room in a drunk-looking manner, feeling sore all over her body.

Su Yang walked out afterward, and he spoke to her, "If you don't want to be at the Assembly Hall, you can stay here and rest."

Wang Shuren quickly shook her head and said, "No, I want to be there because I also want to participate in your alchemy exam."



"You shouldn't force yourself too much. After all, you can barely even walk in a straight line." Su Yang shook his head with a smile on his face.

"Whose fault do you think it is that I am in such a state?" Wang Shuren looked at him with a face of disbelief. "If you didn't do me so intensively, I wouldn't be like this..."

Su Yang burst out laughing and said, "And who was the one that kept screaming 'do me harder'?"

"..."

Wang Shuren's face flushed with redness after hearing his words, and she mumbled, "How hateful."

Sometime later, the two of them left the Burning Lotus Sect and headed to the Assembly Hall, where hundreds of people had already gathered and were waiting for them.

"It's the Senior!"

"This Junior greets the Senior!"

"Welcome back, Senior!"

The people there immediately greeted him with respectful bows.

Once everyone had gathered at the Assembly Hall, Su Yang spoke, "Do you have any questions before I start the exam?"

Someone raised their hand and asked him, "How many tests will there be in total?"

"There will be three simple tests you have to pass in order to become my disciple."

"What happens if more than three people here pass the test?"

"Then we will have a contest between the winners until only the three most talented remains."

"Will we be required to concoct a pill for this examination?"

"No, I don't have the patience for that."

After answering everybody's question, Su Yang began the Alchemy Exam.

"For the first test, I will be testing the strength of your memorization." Su Yang suddenly waved his sleeves, causing hundreds of scrolls to fly towards the participants.

"There will also be two parts for the first test. There are 10,000 ingredients listed in each scroll with 10 different scrolls available, making the grand total 100,000 ingredients. And for the first part of the test, you have ten hours to memorize as many ingredients as you possibly can. In order to continue to the second test, you will have to memorize at least 10,000 ingredients."

"10,000 ingredients in ten hours?!"

At least half of the room was shocked speechless by the difficulty of the first exam. It would be a miracle if they can even memorize 1,000 ingredients in ten hours, much less 10,000!

As for the Alchemy Experts in the room, they all showed confident expressions on their faces, as they have already memorized tens of thousands of ingredients throughout their many years of their life as an Alchemy Master. It was almost like giving a Master Chef a guide book on how to cook basic dishes.

However, as soon as the test began, these Alchemy Experts quickly realized that they were wrong about the test and that they did not know the majority of the ingredients listed on the scrolls, and their confidence quickly shrunk until there was nothing left.

'What the hell is going on? I have memorized over 50,000 ingredients, and I can recall each of them as though they are written on the back of my hand, yet I do not recognize any of these ingredients?! Just how is this possible? Are these ingredients that only exist in the Holy Central Continent? He got me! I should've known that it wouldn't be this easy!' Senior Zeng, one of the most renowned Alchemy Masters in the Eastern Continent, cried inwardly as he was shocked speechless by so many new ingredients that he has never even heard of.

Wang Shuren was no different. Despite being taught by Su Yang, she has never seen most of the ingredients on the scroll before.

However, she did not dare to waste too much time thinking about it and purely focused on memorizing the names of these ingredients.

Ten hours later, Su Yang clapped his hands and said, "It's been ten hours. Stop what you are doing and look at me or I will fail you on the spot."

Immediately, the people there closed the scrolls and looked at him.

Unless one was cultivating, ten hours would normally feel like a long time. But for these participants, these past ten hours felt like ten minutes.

"What do you think of the first test?" Su Yang asked them afterward.

"Senior... are these ingredients from the Holy Central Continent?" One of them asked him.

"Something like that." He nodded.

And he continued, "You may be thinking that I am cheating by doing this, but if I didn't do this, it wouldn't be fair to those without much knowledge or experience in Alchemy, giving the Alchemy Masters here that has decades of experience all the advantage."

"And at the end of the day, I do not care about your current knowledge and abilities. I only seek the ones with the most potential, as that is the purpose of these tests."

Sometime later, Su Yang handed out a blank scroll to every individual in the room and explained to them the second part of the test, "For the next part, I will have you recall as many ingredients as you possibly can from the first part of the test into the scroll I just handed you. All you need to do is think about the ingredients in your mind while touching the scroll, and the scroll will automatically count for you. Just in case you are thinking of cheating by recalling ingredients that did not exist in the 100,000 ingredients I gave you, the scrolls won't count them, but you are free to try."

"And for this part of the test, you will have two hours to remember as many ingredients as you can."

After saying those words, Su Yang began the timer.

The place instantly turned dead silent, and everybody in the room beside Su Yang had their eyes closed to help their focus.

Two hours later, Su Yang suddenly clapped his hands again, startling everybody in the room.

"Open your scrolls and see for yourself the results. If your number is less than 10,000, you have failed the exam, and I will have to ask you to leave this place."

The people there began opening the scroll with trembling hands.

When they saw their results, more than half of the room showed a devastated expression, whilst the others showed relief on their faces.

In just one exam, more than half of the participants have failed, losing their chance to become Su Yang's disciple.

Sometime later, once those who have failed left the Assembly Hall, Su Yang said to the remaining participants, "Who here has over a number over 20,000?"

A few moments later, thirty people raised their hands.

Su Yang nodded and said, "For every 1,000 more ingredients you remember, you will be given 1 point. At the end of the exam, the three people with the most points will become my disciple."

And then he continued, "And for the individual with the best results for each test, you will be given an extra 10 points. So, which of you have the highest number?"

A moment later, Su Xun, his father, revealed his scroll to everyone and spoke, "I have 38,170."

Being one of the few Cultivators that have reached the Heavenly Spirit Realm, Su Xun's mental strength would obviously be much stronger than most people, allowing him to remember things faster.

"Anyone with better results?" Su Yang asked the crowd.

A second later, Bai Lihua raised her hand and said, "45,548."

"As expected of the Sect Leader of an Elite Sect..." The people there silently praised Bai Lihua.

Not only is she a beauty that can devastate an entire country, but she also happens to be one of the most talented individuals within her generation by reaching the Heavenly Spirit Realm at a very young age. Even now, she is the youngest one amongst all of the Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators in the Eastern Continent, not including Su Yang and Hong Yu'er.

"You are Bai Lihua, right?" Su Yang suddenly asked her.

"This humble one is indeed called Bai Lihua," she responded in a slightly surprised voice, as she didn't expect this Senior to recognize her.

"Mmm... I have heard good things about you from my little friend, Su Yang. Whether you pass this exam or not, you can stay here until the exam is done so we can talk more privately."

Hearing Su Yang's words, Bai Lihua's expression bloomed with joy, and she quickly bowed to him, "Thank you, Senior, for sparing your precious time for this humble one!"

'That Su Yang really helped me meet the Alchemy Master! I must thank him properly the next time I see him!' Bai Lihua thought to herself sometime later.

### **Chapter 572 Perfect Score**

"What? Did the Senior just call Su Yang his 'friend'?"

"Is it the same Su Yang from the Profound Blossom Sect?"

"The number one genius who reached the Heavenly Spirit Realm at the age of 17?"

When the people there heard Su Yang's words, they immediately began whispering among themselves.

Although it was quite surprising at first that Su Yang would have connections to the Alchemy Master, after they thought about it for a moment, it made sense for him to know someone from the Holy Central Continent, as that would explain his tremendous growth and talent.

'I knew it! That Su Yang really has connections to the Alchemy Master! But why haven't I seen him yet? Isn't he also here in the city? Or did he come here for another matter?' Lord Xie pondered with a serious expression.

"It seems like we have side-tracked for a moment here. Anyway, does anyone here have a better result?" Su Yang said loudly.

A moment later, an old man revealed his scroll and spoke, "75,651."

"That's Senior Zeng, one of the most renowned Alchemy Masters in the Eastern Continent!"

The people there immediately recognized Senior Zeng, who has been a famous Alchemy Master for over a century now.

"So you are the best in the Eastern Continent?" Su Yang asked him in a calm voice.

"This old man wouldn't dare to claim himself as the best Alchemy Master before your excellence, Senior." Senior Zeng stood up and bowed to him with deep respect. "However, I have studied Alchemy for over 200 years now, so I am fairly confident in my abilities."

Su Yang nodded before continuing, "Anyone else with a higher result?"

A moment later, a beautiful young lady raised her hand, and she showed him the number recorded in her scroll.

"87,979."

"Hoh? Not bad for someone your age, young lady. What's your name?" Su Yang asked her.

The young lady calmly stood up and bowed to him before speaking, "This Junior is called Lou Yixiao, and I am currently Senior Zeng's disciple."

"As expected of Senior Zeng's disciple, she seems more talented than her own Master."

"If I recall correctly, she's only 25 years old, right? And she's only at the Profound Spirit Realm..."

"Although having a higher cultivation base may improve your memorization, talented people like her are born with excellent memories. It's no wonder why Senior Zeng accepted her as his disciple."

"She'll definitely obtain one of those three spots, I bet..."

"Let's not get ahead of ourselves. While she indeed has good memories, we don't know how she'll do in the next two tests."

"I do not care if you already have a Master or not. As long as you have what it takes and you are willing to become my disciple, I will accept you under my tutelage." Su Yang said to her.

A moment later, he turned to look at Wang Shuren and asked her, "What's your result?"

A confident smile appeared on Wang Shuren's face, and she revealed her results.

"93,211."

"How dare you look so smug with such a pathetic result. I have expected a perfect score from you. Looks like I have been going easy on your training lately, huh? Don't worry, once this is over, I will properly educate you." Su Yang said to her.

"..."

The smile on Wang Shuren's face immediately disappeared, and she stared at him with wide eyes filled with disbelief. Even the other people there looked at her with pity on their expressions, with a few of them even laughing at her misfortune inwardly.

"Is this it? Did nobody here obtain a perfect score?" Su Yang asked them a moment later.

Suddenly, another individual raised her hand.

"Here."

The beautiful young lady who just spoke raised her scroll into the air, showing everyone in the room the perfect score of 100,000 written on it.

"That's Hong Yu'er! As expected of the number two genius of the Eastern Continent! If anyone should become the Senior's disciple, it should be someone like her!"

"..."

Su Yang looked at her with narrowed eyes and spoke to her through spiritual sense, "What are you trying to do? What will you gain by becoming my disciple when you are already my wife?"

Tang Lingxi smiled and responded via spiritual sense, "Don't worry, I don't really plan to lower my status from wife to disciple. I'm just trying to have so fun before I return to my original body."

Su Yang sighed inwardly after hearing her reason, and he spoke loudly, "Because Hong Yu'er and Wang Shuren are my disciples already, I won't be counting their scores. Therefore, I will give the extra 10 points to Luo Yixiao for having the best results."

"What?! Hong Yu'er is already his disciple?!"

When the people there heard this news, they stared at her with wide eyes. Even Wang Shuren couldn't help but turn around to look at her with a surprised look.

'When did Su Yang accept her as a disciple? I thought I was the only one!' she cried inwardly, feeling as though her title as 'disciple' was no longer as impressive.

Sometime later, Su Yang continued with the exam.

"For the first test, I tested your memories. Now, for the second test, I will be testing your sense of smell." He said to them.

"As an Alchemist, it is incredibly important to have a good sense of smell, as there exist herbs that cannot be tracked or sensed by spiritual energy but can be found using your nose. It is also important that you can tell apart ingredients by their smells. If you have a good nose, with some training, you will even be able to smell the ingredients of a pill you have never seen before."

The people there looked at him with wide eyes.

One can tell the ingredients of a pill they have never seen before just by smelling it? That sounded a bit unrealistic, as they have never heard of someone with such an ability before.

Unlike Wang Shuren, who has witnessed Su Yang achieve this before, it was simply too hard to believe such a claim.

### **Chapter 573 Second Tes**

Seeing the doubt on everyone's faces, Su Yang sighed inwardly before speaking out loud, "Who here has a pill on them right now? It does not matter what kind of pill it is."

The Alchemy Masters quickly realized what he was trying to do with a pill.

"I have one, Senior." Senior Zeng suddenly raised his hand and spoke. "However, it's not your regular pill, as it was created when I was experimenting on a new pill recipe, and it's not completed yet, so nobody in this world besides myself should know its ingredients."

"That's perfect. Let me see it for a moment." Su Yang casually said.

Senior Zeng nodded and handed him the pill without any hesitation. Because when an Alchemy Master tries to invent a new pill recipe, they would normally keep it a secret until the pill is completed, much less share the pill with someone else, as that would be letting people eat an unfinished dish as a cook.

Once the pill was in his hands, Su Yang placed it right before his nose and gave it a deep but slow sniff.

"Hmmm..."

Su Yang closed his eyes to ponder.

A few moments later, he began listing out the ingredients used to create this unknown pill, "Three grams of Spirit Grass, four grams of Strengthening Powder, a single blade of Harmony Leaf..."

By the time Su Yang finished listing out all of the ingredients, Senior Zeng's face was filled with shock and disbelief.

"A-Amazing! I did not believe it at first, but after witnessing it with my own eyes, I cannot do anything but believe it! You actually listed out every ingredient perfectly!" Senior Zeng exclaimed a moment later, causing the other Alchemy Masters to take deep breaths.

Su Yang then said, "Calm down... I am not finished yet..."

After saying those few words, Su Yang took another sniff at the pill, before speaking, "This pill was created thirty-three days ago, and it came out of the cauldron sometime in the late afternoon."

Senior Zeng's jaw dropped from his mouth after hearing his words, but Su Yang was not done speaking, and he continued, "Judging from the ingredients you'd used to concoct this pill, I can tell that you were trying to create something that will help with your 'illness' down there. I suggest adding four drops of blood from an Earth Turtle and two more grams of Strengthen Powder. That should fix your 'sword' temporarily."

"?!?!?!?"

Senior Zeng nearly fell off his seat after hearing Su Yang's words, the expression on his face looking as though he'd just seen the ghost of his Ancestors.

Meanwhile, the other people in the room looked at Senior Zeng whilst trying their hardest to resist their urges to burst out laughing.

Even his own disciple, Luo Yixiao, was trying to hide the redness on her face by looking away.

"..."

Senior Zeng's face flushed with redness. What did he do to deserve such treatment? He has never lost so much face at once before. And if it weren't for Su Yang's status, he would've long gone to beat Su Yang up for his unnecessary remarks.

However, no matter how angry he was, Senior Zeng controlled his emotions and bowed to Su Yang, before speaking, "Thank you, Senior, for your advice."

Su Yang nodded and spoke as he gazed at the people there, "Is there anyone who still doubts my words?"

The people there quickly shook their heads.

"Good. Then let us begin the second test."

Su Yang waved his sleeves, causing many storage pouches to appear. He then handed one to every individual in the room.

"Inside each storage pouch is 100 different scented pouches, each emitting a unique scent. For the second test, you all have four hours to smell each of these pouches and memorize it. Once the four hours have passed, I will explain the second part of the test. You may begin now."

The people there immediately opened their storage pouches to find 100 small scented pouches inside, each with a unique aroma to it and a number written on the pouch.

They then began to smell each of the scented pouches individually, taking many minutes to memorize the smell and the number it belonged to before moving onto the next scented pouch.

Four hours later, Su Yang clapped his hands and said, "Put everything back into the storage pouch and toss it in the middle of the room."

Sometime later, a pile of storage pouches laid on the floor beside Su Yang.

"I will now give each of you a bottle of scented substance."

Su Yang then handed each of them a small glass bottle that had a few drops of liquid inside.

"I have used 5 different aromas from the 100 scented pouches to create the substance inside the bottle with every bottle in this room emitting a unique aroma, and you all have ten minutes to smell the substance inside the bottle and find out which of the 5 aromas I had used to create that mixture. Once you have an answer, you may reseal the bottle, as that will declare your completion. You may begin now."

The people there looked at the glass bottle in their hands with a dazed expression on their faces.

When they opened the bottle and smelled the aroma, they cried inwardly, 'This is fucking impossible! I am not a pig, nor do I have the nose of a dog! How the hell am I supposed to figure out which aroma he'd mixed inside?!'

Seeing the perplexed and troubled expression on their faces, Su Yang smiled behind his mask, 'If it was too easy, I wouldn't have needed this examination to find a disciple!'

While the majority of the people in the room were having trouble sniffing out the correct aromas, Tang Lingxi took a single sniff of the bottle before casually sealing the bottle and placing it down.

Three minutes later, Wang Shuren also sealed the bottle with a confident expression on her face.

At the fourth minute, a pretty young lady that was not Luo Yixiao sealed the bottle.

Five minutes into the test, Senior Zeng and Bai Lihua sealed their bottles with a few seconds in between

Six minutes into the test, Luo Yixiao finally sealed her own bottle.

At the seventh minute, Su Xun and a few others sealed their bottles.

During the last three minutes, another ten people sealed their bottles, whilst the remaining participants showed a defeated expression on their faces.

By the end of the test, less than 20 people have managed to seal their bottles.

### **Chapter 574 The Third Tes**

Once the ten minutes had passed, Su Yang handed out another piece of paper to everyone in the room and said, "It'll be just like the first test. The scroll will automatically record your thoughts, and it does not



allow you to guess an answer, so if you do not have a confident answer, the scroll will not treat it as though you don't have an answer."

Despite his words, nobody in the room willingly left the room. Even if they were not confident about their answers, they still had to try.

Sometime later, when everyone in the room has their result, Su Yang spoke, "If your scroll is blank, you have failed the test, and you may leave."

Immediately after he said those words, almost all of the people in the room stood up and left the place.

A few minutes later, less than 100 participants remained in the room.

"Now, if your scroll has a number that's lower than three, you may also leave this room."

Those who had either number one or two on their scrolls immediately sighed, before leaving the room.

"If you have the number three on your scroll, it means that you have barely passed the test by getting three out of the five available answers correct. If you have number four, it means you have a powerful nose. If you figured out all five ingredients in your mixture, then you have a special nose that's suited for Alchemy, as only 1 in 10,000,000 people are born with a nose that can smell all five aromas from the mixture." Su Yang said to the remaining 20 people in the room.

"W-Wait a moment, Senior. Are you saying that only certain people with a special nose are able to smell all five aromas no matter what? Then what was the point of giving everyone a unique aroma?" Senior Zeng asked him, as he only managed to guess 3 out of 5 aromas, barely passing the second test despite ranking highly in the first one.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Everybody actually had the same mixture in their glass bottle. However, the mixture itself is very unique, and it will smell different depending on the person, hence why I said every glass bottle has a unique scent. As for the ingredients, they are all of the possible scents from the mixture."

"The mixture I gave you is called the 'Ever-changing Perfume', and depending on how sharp your sense of smell is, you can only smell whatever it allows you to."

"And if you cannot discern three or more aromas from the Ever-changing Perfume, it simply means that you do not have the nose to learn the techniques that I will be teaching my disciples."

Su Yang then spoke, "Show me your results. If your result is three, I will give you 10 points. If your result is four, I will give you 25 points, and if you have a perfect result, I will give you 50 points."

Sometime later, Su Yang began naming out every individual with the same result.

"Hong Yu'er, Su Xun, Senior Feng... 10 points."

"What? Hong Yu'er also barely managed to pass?"

The people there looked at her with surprised looks.

'Hmph. This body was not born with any talent for Alchemy, hence why I could only smell three out of five aromas. This is something even I cannot change. As for the first test, if not for my mental strength

assisting this body, it would've been impossible for Hong Yu'er to have memorized all 100,000 ingredients...' Tang Lingxi thought to herself.

"Bai Lihua, Luo Yixiao, Wang Shuren... 25 points."

After naming everybody in the room except one person, Su Yang turned to look at the young lady who sealed her glass bottle four minutes into the test.

"You are the only one who has managed to discern all 5 aromas from the mixture. What's your name?" Su Yang asked her.

The young lady stood up and gave him an elegant bow before speaking, "This Junior is called Cai Yan, the youngest daughter of the Cai Family."

He nodded and continued, "If you can pass the final test and become my disciple, I have a technique that'll further strengthen your sense of smell. If mastered, you can smell certain things even from miles away."

"This Junior will do her best in order to not disappoint the Senior." Cai Yan bowed to him again before returning to her seat.

A few moments later, Su Yang looked at the remaining participants and said to them, "This will be the last test, but before I allow you partake in it, I must warn you that by participating in this test, you might suffer damages to your mind, so I will give all of you a few minutes to rethink this through."

"We might suffer mental damage? What kind of test is this?" Senior Zeng asked him.

"It would spoil the fun if I told you about it in advance." Su Yang shook his head, and he continued, "I can tell you, but you will have to forfeit the test."

The participants there exchanged looks with each other, their expressions filled with anxiousness and skepticism.

However, despite being told that they could damage their mind, nobody gave up, as they have progressed too far to give up now. Furthermore, even if it was risky, they believed that it was entirely worth it if they can be the disciple of a great figure like him.

"Nobody is giving up? Good." Su Yang smiled behind the mask.

And he continued, "Wang Shuren, Hong Yu'er, there's no need for the two of you to participate in this test."

Wang Shuren sighed with relief inwardly after hearing his words, as she did not want to experience that solitude again, or she might really go crazy.

As for Tang Lingxi, there was no point in making her partake in this test, as she was not really trying to become his disciple, and as a fellow Immortal, she was guaranteed to pass the test, anyway.

"As for the rest of you, I want you to sit beside each other in the lotus position and close your eyes." Su Yang said to them.

## **Chapter 575 Soul Invading Pill**

After Su Yang's instructions, the remaining participants all gathered in the middle of the room and sat down in the lotus position before closing their eyes.

"This exam will only last one hour, but it might feel slightly longer depending on your mental strength. Good luck." Su Yang said to them before retrieving the Everlasting Time Pill and crushing it.

After smearing the powder into the air and over these participants, the entire room immediately turned silent.

"One hour... so they have to endure 10 years of solitude?" Wang Shuren asked him after seeing no response from the participants.

If she had experienced 100 years of solitude in 10 hours in the real world, it would make sense that one hour would mean 10 years of solitude.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "While it is true that they have to endure a minimum of 10 years of solitude, depending on their mental strength, it might increase for a few more years. For example, the pill is more effective on those who are weak-minded, and if you are terrified of being alone, those 10 years will become 11 years... 12 years... perhaps even longer."

Wang Shuren looked at the participants with a worried expression on her face, and she asked him, "What will you do if their mind really gets injured in the process? They are people with profound and powerful backgrounds. If they arrived here with a normal and healthy mind but return home retarded... I don't want to imagine what they might try to do..."

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Don't worry, I only said that to mess with their minds, increasing the effects of the pill on them. I will wake them up before they go crazy."

"This pill sure brings back some unpleasant memories..." Tang Lingxi suddenly spoke in a nostalgic voice, causing Wang Shuren to look at her with interest.

"Since you are also his disciple, you should know the Master's real identity, right?" she asked Tang Lingxi, who was still occupying Hong Yu'er's mortal body.

"Disciple? Since you aren't aware of the situation I won't blame you too much, but don't you dare lower my standing to a mere disciple. I am not his disciple. I am his wife." Tang Lingxi responded with a cold stare, sending chills down Wang Shuren's back.

"Oh... right... You are engaged with Su Yang. I nearly forgot. I apologize..." Wang Shuren said a moment later.

"..."

Seeing Tang Lingxi narrow her eyes, Wang Shuren quickly asked with a puzzled expression, "Am I wrong?"

"No, you are not wrong. I am his fiancée... but I am also not."

Hearing Tang Lingxi's confusing words, Wang Shuren tilted her head with raised eyebrows.

"Is she safe?" Tang Lingxi looked at Su Yang and asked him.

He nodded. "I have already told her about my real background."

"Listen well, Su Yang's disciple. You may be looking at Hong Yu'er right now, but I am not Hong Yu'er— at least not on the inside. My name is Tang Lingxi, and I am currently occupying Hong Yu'er's mortal body with the help of a Soul Invading Pill."

Hearing Tang Lingxi's seemingly crazy words, Wang Shuren's jaw dropped to the ground.

"Don't worry, I have Hong Yu'er's permission to use her body. Anyway, my real body is currently at the Four Divine Heavens, where Su Yang is originally from." Tang Lingxi continued to explain to her.

"Four Divine Heavens! So you are also an Immortal?!"

Tang Lingxi nodded and said, "But I am not just any Immortal. I am from the Asura God Clan, one of the most feared powers in the whole universe!"

"Wow..."

Although Wang Shuren does not comprehend even slightly the full extent of the Asura God Clan's prowess and reputation, she could not help but admire the otherworldly aura emitting from Tang Lingxi's body.

"By the way, what's this Soul Invading Pill?" Wang Shuren asked a moment later, as she was more interested in Alchemy than anything else.

"The Soul Invading Pill is a priceless and forbidden pill that allows one to detach their soul from their own body and temporarily invade anyone with a weaker mental. There is only one person in this entire universe who can concoct such a pill — the Alchemy God." Su Yang said to her.

"The Alchemy God!" Wang Shuren's desire to meet this individual greatly increased after learning of the existence of the Soul Invading Pill. After all, what kind of person could possibly create such a heaven-defying pill that allows one to invade another's body?

However, when Tang Lingxi heard them mention the name 'Alchemy God', her expression soured.

"Is there something wrong?" Wang Shuren noticed Tang Lingxi's expression and asked her.

"No... it's just that she's a very controversial person, so whenever someone mentions her, you would more often than not see similar expressions." Tang Lingxi sighed.

"Does it have anything to do with the Soul Invading Pill— a forbidden pill?"

"That's only one of many crazy pills that she has invented. There are even worse pills out there that could easily put the Soul Invading Pill to shame. One can only wonder why she would create these kinds of pills." Tang Lingxi said.

She then looked at Su Yang and thought to herself, 'Though, it's even more mysterious how he managed to seduce her, who's renowned for not caring about everything that's not Alchemy related.'

A few minutes into the final test, one of the participants suddenly trembled.

When Su Yang saw this, he immediately approached that individual and slapped that person in the face, immediately waking them up.

"Haa... haa... haaa... Where am I...?" The participant began panting heavily after waking up.

"Calm down. You are still in the Assembly Hall." Su Yang said to the man.

"W-What?! I-Impossible! But I was... for an entire year...!" The man looked at him with a panicked face.

However, Su Yang did not say anything else, and he suddenly poked the man's forehead with his index finger, which was glowing with a golden light.

A few seconds later, the man's expression turned blank, and his eyes were void of light, almost as though he had lost his mind.

After a few more seconds, the light returned to the man's eyes.

"Huh? What was I doing just now?" The man looked around with a confused expression.

"You have failed the exam. You should leave now." Su Yang said to him.

"What?! That's impossible!" The man exclaimed in a shocked voice, as he doesn't even remember taking the exam!

#### **Chapter 576 End of the Alchemy Exam**

"Impossible, you say? Look around you. You are the only one here who has opened his eyes." Su Yang said to him, and he continued. "However, if you are not satisfied with the results, we can have a little contest in Alchemy. If you win, I will pass you, how about it?"

"I... I agree with the results..." Not daring to offend Su Yang, the participant mumbled with a disheartened face before leaving the place.

"Did you... did you just erase that man's memories?" Wang Shuren asked him afterward, her eyes filled with shock.

He nodded and said, "That's right. If I didn't erase his memories, his mind would've suffered some internal injuries."

"To think you can even erase one's memories, as expected for an Immortal. Is there anything that you can't do, Su Yang?" she asked him.

"Because I am always traveling, I have experienced many things in my previous life, so there is very little that I don't know. With that being said, I am not perfect, so there are obviously things that even I cannot do."

"Is that so..." Wang Shuren's eyes flickered with interest, but alas, knowing Su Yang, he definitely wouldn't tell her about his weaknesses.

Meanwhile, inside the participants' minds, the majority of them were still trying to figure out the situation despite spending many months inside the illusion.

"Just where did the Senior bring me? I am going crazy!"

"Ahhhh! Is there anybody here?! Hello?!"

"Please! I cannot stay here for much longer! There are places I have to be!"

Thirty minutes into the final test, over half of the participants were forced to wake up by Su Yang, as they were unable to endure the burden on their minds any longer.

After waking up, Su Yang proceeded to remove their memories before letting them leave.

"Cough!"

Su Xun woke up at the forty-minute mark, even coughing up a mouthful of blood afterward.

"W-What happened to me?" Su Xun looked around with a confused look on his face.

"You have failed the exam." Su Yang said to him.

"Is that so... That's a pity." Su Xun sighed.

"Well, since you are Su Yang's father, I shall bestow you a gift before you leave..."

Su Yang said to him before taking out a Heaven Transcendence Pill and handing it to him.

"Although this pill may not have any effect on you, I'm sure you'll find some use for it."

"T-Thank you, Senior Alchemist!" Su Xun quickly bowed to him.

With the Heaven Transcendence Pill in hand, Su Xun no longer felt as dispirited for failing the exam, even feeling quite elevated.

After leaving the Assembly Hall, Su Xun looked at the pill and thought to himself, 'Since Su Yang has already reached the Heavenly Spirit Realm, I should give this pill to Su Yin, who is still at the Earth Spirit Realm. Despite their revolting behavior, they are still my children — and very talented ones at that.'

A few minutes after Su Xun left the Assembly Hall, a few more participants woke up.

By the time there were only 5 minutes left in the exam, there were only four individuals left in the exam — Senior Zeng, Luo Yixiao, Cai Yan, and surprisingly, Bai Lihua.

"This is truly unexpected. I didn't expect Sect Leader Bai to last this long." Wang Shuren suddenly said.

Su Yang nodded, "Even I did not expect this."

"Who do you think will win in the end? I have my money on Senior Zeng, Sect Leader Bai, and Luo Yixiao." Wang Shuren said.

"That old man's no good." Tang Lingxi suddenly said.

"Huh? What makes you think that?" Wang Shuren asked her.

"Just a hunch," she casually said.

"A hunch, you say...?"

When there was only 1 minute left in the exam, Su Yang stood before Senior Zeng with a pondering gaze.

A few seconds later, Su Yang shook his head and slapped Senior Zeng awake.

"Huh?! What happened?! Where am I?!"

Senior Zeng quickly began panicking.

However, Su Yang gave him a few more slaps and said, "Calm down, old man. You are in the Assembly Hall."

"A-Assembly Hall...? Oh, right! The exam! I was taking the exam when I was suddenly thrown into this mysterious place, where I spent ten years in solitude!" Senior Zeng's memories quickly returned.

"What you experienced was merely an illusion — a dream, so to speak. I have erased the memories of the other participants that have failed, but I will let you keep yours, as it will be beneficial for you."

"Thank you, Senior." Senior Zeng bowed to him.

He then turned to look at Luo Yixiao, who was sitting there with a peaceful face.

'Thank heavens she hasn't failed yet...' he sighed with relief inwardly.

"Senior, do you think my disciple will pass the exam?" he asked Su Yang.

"We will know in a few seconds..." he responded.

Ten seconds later, Su Yang waved his sleeves, causing a gentle wind to brush past the participants' faces, and they began to wake up a few more seconds later.

"Hmm?"

"What is going on?"

"Where is this?"

The three ladies woke up with a confused expression on their faces, but they did not panic as the others had.

"Congratulations on passing the exam, you three. Do you remember me?" Su Yang's voice caused the three of them to turn and look at him simultaneously.

"You are... Senior Alchemist!"

"Senior! What happened to me? Before I knew it, I was transported to this endless mountain range, where I was stuck for many years!" Bai Lihua asked him.

Su Yang smiled behind his mask, and he proceeded to explain to them the situation.

"Everlasting Time Pill? To think such a profound pill could exist in this world..." Senior Zeng expressed great shock after learning of the pill's existence.

"So everything we've experienced in that place was only in our minds? It wasn't real?" Bai Lihua asked him.

"That's right. Though, you can also say that it was real because whatever insight you've gained while in that state will remain inside your head forever." Su Yang nodded.

### **Chapter 577 Accepting Three Beautiful Disciples**

"Umm... since we are the only three people that have passed all three exams, does this automatically make us your disciple?" Bai Lihua asked him sometime later.

Su Yang nodded, "That's right. Unless you don't want to become my disciple."

"It's not that I don't want to become the Senior's disciple, but I am the Sect Leader of an Elite Sect... I cannot simply push away my responsibilities as a Sect Leader just to learn Alchemy. And to be completely honest, I did not expect to last till the end, much less become your disciple... I don't even know anything about Alchemy."

"You don't have to worry about pushing away your responsibilities, because I won't take up much of your time. If you are willing to become my disciple, I will give you some techniques to study alone, and if you ever need advice, I will be there for you." Su Yang said to her.

"As for knowing nothing about Alchemy... isn't that the same for everyone when they try to walk a new path?"

"However, if you are serious about trying to become the best Alchemy Master in this world, then I will have to train you more seriously, and that will take up more of your time."

"Now, are you willing to accept me as your Master?" Su Yang asked the three ladies that stood before him.

"Cai Yan greets Master." The daughter of the Cai Family was the first one to accept him as Master, kowtowing without hesitation.

After pondering for a moment, Bai Lihua also kowtowed before him, "Bai Lihua greets Master."

If she becomes the disciple of someone as powerful as him, the Heavenly Swan Sect will also benefit from it. Furthermore, despite knowing nothing about Alchemy, she is always eager to learn something new, especially if she has the talent for it.

The only one who has yet to decide right now was Luo Yixiao, who was silently staring at Senior Zeng, almost as though she was asking for permission.

"What are you doing, you silly child? Hurry up and greet your new Master! If I were in your shoes, I wouldn't even hesitate!" Senior Zeng quickly said to her. "Although my abilities cannot compare to Senior Alchemist, you will always be my disciple in my heart."

Hearing his words, Luo Yixiao nodded her head, before kowtowing to Su Yang.

"Luo Yixiao greets her new Master."



"I have said this before, but you don't need to abandon your current Master in order to become my disciple. After all, I will only be your Master for at most two years, before I leave this place." Su Yang said to her.

"Eh? Will you be returning to the Holy Central Continent in two years, Senior?" Senior Zeng asked him.

"Something like that, I guess." He nodded, and continued, "Anyway, I will teach you everything I can for the next two years. After that... you will have to start studying by yourself."

"I will begin my first lecture next month. You can do whatever you want until then. Once it's time for the lecture, I will come to find you."

"However, before you leave, take these techniques and study them until our lecture." Su Yang then handed to each of them a couple of techniques for Alchemy.

"Thank you, Master!"

He then turned to look at Bai Lihua and said, "Regarding our private conversation, I will find you at the Heavenly Swan Sect in a few days."

"I understand, Master. I will prepare for your arrival." Bai Lihua nodded.

Sometime later, Su Yang dismissed the three of them.

"Is this it?" Wang Shuren asked him afterward.

"Yes, we are done for now. Were you expecting something else?" he said.

"I thought you were going to teach them a thing or two before letting them leave."

"Teaching Alchemy is not like teaching them Cultivation. They need to fully understand the basics before we can even start. And it's more effective to teach them like this."

"Anyway, I will be returning to the Profound Blossom Sect now. What are you going to do, Lingxi?" he asked her.

"Hmm... thanks to someone stealing my disciple, my schedule has unexpectedly opened up, so I think I will have some fun at the Profound Blossom Sect," she responded a moment later.

"What? Someone stole your disciple?" Su Yang looked at her with wide eyes.

He was more shocked by the fact that she would even accept a disciple than anything else.

"Well, I owed a favor to the Azure Cloud Sect's Leader for a few things, and he wanted me to train some brat from one of the Four Great Families in return. However, before she could even arrive at the Sect, she joined another Sect. What do you think, my darling? Does this situation sound familiar to you?"

"Well, this is truly unexpected." Su Yang laughed out loud after realizing the situation.

"Anyway, you are more than welcomed to stay in the Profound Blossom Sect," he continued a moment later.

Tang Lingxi nodded and said, "I will head to the Profound Blossom Sect after I return to the Azure Cloud Sect to let them know about my whereabouts."

After saying that, Tang Lingxi left the Assembly Hall.

"Well, I will be returning to the Burning Lotus Sect and continue with my own training. I cannot let these new disciples surpass me even if it kills me." Wang Shuren said to him.

"Take these with you." Su Yang suddenly tossed a small bottle filled with pills to her.

"What are these?" she asked.

"Consume one of them before you start concocting pills. It'll help with your concentration. As for the pill itself, I will let you figure it out yourself."

"Oh? Is this a challenge for me?" Wang Shuren suddenly spoke with a smile.

"That wasn't my intention, but since you mentioned it, if you cannot figure out the ingredients by the next time I visit you, I will make sure that you won't be able to move your body for the rest of the day."

"I-I won't lose this time!" Wang Shuren said in a nervous voice before hurrying away, as she cannot spare even a second there anymore.

Su Yang also returned to the Profound Blossom Sect shortly afterward.

### **Chapter 578 Approaching Danger**

"You're finally back, Su Yang?" Liu Lanzhi said to him after noticing his figure from her window at the Yin Yang Pavilion.

"Sorry it took longer than I'd anticipated," he said. "Did something happen during my absence?"

"Her Highness was looking for you, and a few disciples also wanted to Cultivate with you."

"I see." Su Yang nodded before turning around and heading to Xie Xingfang's living quarters, and he knocked on her door a few minutes later.

"Su Yang. You're back." She greeted him with a beautiful smile.

"Un. I had some business at the Burning Lotus Sect. Did you want to speak to me?"

"Please, come inside." She said.

Su Yang nodded, and the moment he entered the house, he could feel Xie Wang's spiritual sense watching him.

"Calm down, old man. It's not like I will eat her or anything." Su Yang chuckled.

"Grandfather, we are the guests here, not the other way around..." Xie Xingfang also voiced her displeasure.

"Che..."

A moment later, the spiritual sense following Su Yang disappeared.

"Let me pour you some tea."

Xie Xingfang quickly retrieved a teapot from her storage ring that was still hot and poured a cup for him.

"Thank you." Su Yang calmly sipped on the tea.

"You can drink the tea while I speak," Xie Xingfang said to him, and she continued, "So I wanted to speak to you regarding the pill that will allow people besides myself to enter the Abandoned Forest, and after using my family's resources, we were able to find the ingredients to concoct the pill."

"Oh? That's good to hear." Su Yang said.

"Yes... however, we have a slight problem. While we were able to secure the ingredients for the pill, due to the rarity for one of the ingredients, there are only enough ingredients to concoct one pill."

"I know this may sound incredibly selfish, but I would like to ask you to accompany me to the Abandoned Forest..." she said to him in a bashful voice, as it was quite difficult and embarrassing for her to request his help after everything he's already done for her.

"Besides my father and my grandfather, I cannot imagine anyone else who could defeat the Purple Qilin, and I feel safer with you than with them."

Su Yang placed the tea down with a smile and said, "How can I refuse a request from a beauty like you, especially when you say something like that? It will be my pleasure to accompany you to the Abandoned Forest."

Seeing the handsome smile on Su Yang's face, Xie Xingfang blushed, and she nodded, "Thank you, Su Yang. One day... I will definitely repay you for everything that you've done for me and my family."

"When would you like to head to the Abandoned Forest?" He asked her.

"Although we have located the ingredients, we still need to have them delivered. We can head to the Abandoned Forest after my family opens up the Celestial Pond. There's also the dinner that my family owes you."

Su Yang nodded.

Sometime later, Su Yang returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion.

"Hmm?"

When he approached his room, he noticed a small and incredibly beautiful figure quietly standing in front of his door.

"Xiao Rong has been waiting for your return, Master," she said to him.

"Hmm?" Su Yang immediately noticed something different about her aura; it appeared more mature and elegant than before.

'I guess whatever Qin Liangyu has been teaching her is working...' he smiled inwardly.

"Do you need something from me, Xiao Rong?" he asked her.

She nodded and said, "That bad cat is approaching this place."

"Huh? Bad cat? What are you talking about?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

"The one from the Holy Central Continent," she said.

However, Su Yang remained confused.

Seeing this, Xiao Rong explained to him about her encounter with Patriarch Gold, who had tried to assault her after seeing her.

"Oh... so that's why you destroyed their entire Sect. I understand the situation now." Su Yang nodded.

"So it turns out that the expert coming to hunt Xie Xingfang is the same person who tried to assault you, huh? Why am I not surprised?" Su Yang calmly shook his head.

"How long until they arrive?" he then asked.

"About one week," she responded.

"Then there is plenty of time to prepare — not that we need to, anyway."

"Should I just kill him?" Xiao Rong asked him.

"No, I will deal with him personally. Even though you have already punished him for trying to assault you, I have yet to do so. Furthermore, I have a duty to protect Xie Xingfang, who sought protection from me."

Xiao Rong nodded.

"Anyway, I am going to train a few disciples now."

Before leaving, he said to Xiao Rong, "By the way, you have matured slightly since the last time I saw you. If you continue to grow, I will allow you to taste as much Yang Qi as you want from me."

Xiao Rong's eyes widened with surprise after hearing his words, and she nodded with a delightful expression, "Yes, Master!"

"But don't cause too much trouble for Qin Liangyu."

"I won't, Master!" Xiao Rong said before disappearing from the place, presumably returning to Qin Liangyu's side for more practice.

"Patriarch Gold, huh? Looks like I will have to visit the Holy Central Continent sooner than I'd anticipated. I wonder how those two are fairing now?" Su Yang mumbled to himself before leaving the Yin Yang Pavilion to look for the disciples that wanted to cultivate with him.

After spending the next few days cultivating with all of the female disciples, Su Yang prepared to head to the Heavenly Swan Sect.

Meanwhile, during the last few days, what happened at the Assembly Hall has spread throughout the entire Continent like wildfire, and there's not a single person who hasn't heard of the Alchemy Master from the Holy Central Continent and his world-changing pills.

## Chapter 579 Visiting the Heavenly Swan Sect

"Did you hear about the Heaven Transcendence Pill? It's just like the Earth Advancement Pills but even better, allowing people in the Earth Spirit Realm to enter the Heavenly Spirit Realm with a high success rate!"

"Of course, I have heard about it! With everybody and their grandmother talking about it, there's not a single person who hasn't heard about it by now!"

"Because of this Heaven Transcendence Pill, the entire Cultivation World is in a turmoil, much more so than when the Earth Advancement Pill was announced."

"That's only obvious. Do you have any idea how many Cultivators have reached the Heavenly Spirit Realm that is still alive? Around ten people! However, with the Heaven Transcendence Pill, that number will definitely double, if not triple or more!"

"Even if you say that, how does one even obtain a Heaven Transcendence Pill? I heard that only the Fang Family's Matriarch managed to obtain one, and she had to pay a massive bill of 30 million spirit stones for it."

"Nobody knows, but there are people trying to contact Senior Xiao's disciples regarding the pills."

"Who were those three disciples, again?"

"If I recall correctly, Sect Leader of the Heavenly Swan Sect, Senior Zeng's old disciple, and the youngest daughter of the Cai Family."

"What? All three of them are beautiful women? This Senior Xiao is incredibly lucky. If I had such beautiful disciples, I would do most of our lectures in bed!"

"Does anyone know what this Senior Xiao looks like? Hopefully, he's some ugly old man, hence why he needed to disguise himself."

"Who cares if he's ugly or not? With his current reputation, even the most beautiful women would not hesitate to give their bodies to him."

"Damn it! If only I was born in his shoes! Lucky bastard!"

Whilst the entire world talked about Senior Xiao and his three disciples, Su Yang was making his way towards the Heavenly Swan Sect.

And when he reached the front of the Sect, all he could see was a massive crowd standing outside the Heavenly Swan Sect, looking like a sea of people.

However, he was not interested in why these people were there, so he flew towards the Heavenly Swan Sect before everyone there.

"Look over there! There's an expert approaching us!"

Someone in the crowd warned everybody when he noticed Su Yang's approaching figure.

"Black alchemy robes and a mask... Could that be Senior Xiao, the Alchemy Master?!"

When they realized who he was, they immediately made way for him despite being on the ground.

Su Yang descended from the sky and calmly walked the path made by the crowd.

"The Heavenly Swan Sect humbly greets Senior Xiao," bowed the Sect Elder who had been dealing with the crowd just now.

"Is Bai Lihua available?" he asked.

"The Sect Leader is currently waiting for you inside."

Su Yang nodded. "Let me see her."

The Sect Elder then opened the gates to allow Su Yang inside whilst the others watched.

Once Su Yang entered the Sect, the Sect Elder spoke to the crowd outside, "Now you understand why the Sect Leader is not willing to see any guests right now. If you wish to speak with our Sect Leader, you should come back at a later date."

The crowd of people did not utter a single word afterward, and they all began leaving shortly later.

Meanwhile, inside the Heavenly Swan Sect, Su Yang was greeted by over a thousand disciples the moment he passed through the gates, and every single one of them was female disciples.

A nostalgic smile appeared behind his mask as he recalled a similar situation that had happened before.

The Heavenly Swan Sect is as its name suggests, with every disciple in the Sect as beautiful as a heavenly swan.

"Welcome to my Heavenly Swan Sect, Master." Bai Lihua appeared a few moments later with a bright smile.

Ever since she became his disciple, her reputation along with the Sect's status has skyrocketed with almost every influential family knocking at their doors.

"You didn't have to send so many disciples just to greet me. I'm sure they have better things to do." Su Yang said.

"That's not right, Master. I didn't ask these disciples to greet you. They wanted to greet you on their own accord." Bai Lihua said to him.

"Is that so? To have so many beautiful young ladies greeting me at once, I feel like the luckiest man in the world at this moment." Su Yang spoke in a joking tone.

"Please, follow me, Master. I have prepared for you the best living quarters we have available in the Sect."

"You shouldn't have. I won't be staying here for long, after all."

"That's fine, since I made it your living quarters permanently, so it will always be available for you whenever you decide to visit the Sect."

Su Yang followed Bai Lihua a few moments later.

"What do you girls think about this Senior Xiao? Do you think he's actually a handsome man, contrary to the rumors of him being of some ugly old man?" One of the disciples asked after they left.

"It's hard to tell just by his body figure..."

"I wish I could see what's behind that mask."

Meanwhile, Bai Lihua brought Su Yang back to her own living quarters.

"Let me introduce you to my own disciple, Su Yin." Bai Lihua said.

"Greet Senior Xiao, Su Yin."

"..."

However, Su Yin silently stood there with a weird expression, seemingly in deep thoughts.

Although she has never seen this man before, there was something familiar about him.

And then she realized why, and she asked him, "Why do you smell like my Brother?"

"..."

Bai Lihua's eyes widened with shock after hearing Su Yin's words, and she turned to look at Su Yang.

"Hahaha!" Even Su Yang couldn't help but burst out laughing. Although he'd disguised his voice and figure, he did not do anything to his smell. However, he truly did not expect Su Yin to sniff out his real identity. Either Su Yin also has talent in Alchemy, or she's simply that obsessed with Su Yang.

### **Chapter 580 I Am Not Su Yang**

"S-Su Yin! How could you say such a thing to my Master?! Apologize right now!" Bai Lihua said to her with a frown.

"But it's true... I can smell my Brother's scent on him..." she said.

"You—!"

"It's fine." Su Yang casually waved his hand and spoke, "You really love your Brother, Su Yang, don't you?"

"I love him very much!" Su Yin quickly nodded.

"Well, I happen to be a very good friend of Su Yang, and since you are his little sister, if he cannot solve something for you, you come to me for help." Su Yang said.

"There's nothing in this world that my Brother cannot solve." Su Yin said with a confident smile.

"If you say so..." Su Yang smiled behind his mask.

"Anyway, let's talk more privately, shall we?" He then turned to look at Bai Lihua, who nodded.

Sometime later, Su Yang entered Bai Lihua's room.

"Although it's nothing fancy, please have some tea." Bai Lihua said as she poured him some tea.

However, Su Yang did not immediately drink the tea and only silently stared at it.

Bai Lihua wondered if there was something wrong with the tea, but when she realized that he was still wearing his mask, she quickly apologized, "I-I'm sorry, Master. I forgot that you can't drink tea while wearing your mask..."

"No, it's fine. I can take off my mask." Su Yang suddenly said.

"Eh? Really?" Bai Lihua looked at him with wide eyes, as she did not expect him to reveal his face so soon.

"You are my disciple now, so there's no longer any reason for me to hide my face." Su Yang said as he reached for his mask.

\*Gulp\*

Bai Lihua swallowed nervously as she watched Su Yang's fingers approach the mask, her heart filled with anticipation.

A moment later, Su Yang removed the mask and showed her his face.

"Y-You are?! S-Su Yang?!" Bai Lihua exclaimed in a shocked voice after seeing his face.

However, although his face resembled Su Yang's facial features, it was also different at the same time, as his face appeared more mature and handsome than Su Yang.

"I know what you are thinking, but I am not Su Yang." Su Yang said with a smile on his face. "We happen to look the same, but I can assure you that we are two different individuals."

"Is that even possible...?" Bai Lihua continued to stare at him with wide eyes. "I find it harder to believe that you are not Su Yang than everything you've shown me so far..."

"Hahaha... Trust me, I was as surprised as you are now when I first saw Su Yang and the resemblance we have." Su Yang continued to act as though he was a different person despite having almost the same face.

If it were anybody else in Su Yang's shoes right now, they would surely not be able to convince even an idiot that he was not Su Yang.

"..."

"Are you telling me the truth?" Bai Lihua narrowed her eyes at him, clearly still suspicious of him.

"Of course. What would I gain by lying to you?" he calmly sipped on the tea.

"I see..." Bai Lihua nodded a moment later, and she continued, "I'm sorry for doubting you, Master, but it's simply too hard to believe such coincidences..."

"I understand your position, so there's no need to feel guilty."

"..."

Bai Lihua continued to stare at Su Yang's face even many moments later, seemingly in a daze.



"So? Why did you wish to speak with me?" Su Yang asked her after many moments of silence.

"Oh, right!" Bai Lihua quickly snapped out of her daze and said, "Well, I originally wanted to speak to you about buying some Earth Advancement Pills, but now that I am your disciple, it means I can concoct them myself, right?"

Su Yang nodded, "Indeed, I plan on sharing the recipe for the Earth Spirit Realm to all three of you, but it'll take at least a few years of training before you can actually concoct it."

"I-I see..." Bai Lihua showed a disappointed face after hearing his words.

"Well, if you need Earth Advancement Pills, I have some with me right now. You can take it since I have no use for it." Su Yang then retrieved a few bottles of Earth Advancement Pills and placed it on the table.

"T-Thank you, Master!" Bai Lihua's eyes flickered with excitement after seeing the thirty or so pills on the table. This is the most Earth Advancement Pill she has seen at once to date.

"There's no need to thank me. It is also a Master's responsibility to help out their disciple whenever they can." Su Yang said with a smile, causing Bai Lihua to blush.

'Damn it! Even though he looks like Su Yang, he's incredibly handsome and totally my type! Would Su Yang also look like this in ten or twenty years from now? That would be problematic for me for many reasons!' Bai Lihua pondered to herself, feeling as though her heart was beating through her chest.

"Well, if you have nothing else for me, I shall take my leave." Su Yang said as he stood up and covered his face with the mask again.

"You're already leaving, Master? You just got here..." Bai Lihua said, seemingly reluctant to see him go.

"I would stay here longer if I could, but unfortunately, there are matters I must attend to. I will stay here longer for my next visit when I start your lecture, so you should study the three techniques I gave you."

"I understand... Then at least let me escort you to the exit."

Su Yang nodded, he followed her until they were outside of the Sect.

"Please have a safe trip, Master." Bai Lihua bowed to him.

"I will see you again next month." Su Yang nodded and took flight, before disappearing into the distance shortly after.

"..."

Bai Lihua remained standing outside the Sect even many minutes after Su Yang had left, seemingly dazed.

"Haaa... what should I do? I have never felt like this before..." Bai Lihua sighed, and she moved her hands to her chest, feeling its strong throbbing.

"But I am his disciple, and I doubt he would find any interest in a woman like me..."

One could say Bai Lihua has fallen for the mature Su Yang at first glance, but because of their Master and Disciple relationship, such feelings could only be described as a burden to her.

Meanwhile, after returning to the Profound Blossom Sect, Su Yang knocked on Xie Xingfang's door.

"Hello, Su Yang. How may I help you?" Xie Xingfang greeted him at the door.

"They are going to be here in a few days," he said.

"They...? Who?" Xie Xingfang tilted her head in a puzzled manner.

"Who else but the people coming from the Holy Central Continent."

"!!!"

Xie Xingfang's eyes widened with shock.

"What?! The Moonlight Blades actually managed to reach the Holy Central Continent and somehow convinced the people there to help them?! Impossible!" Xie Wang appeared out of thin air while shouting loudly.

"Are you certain about this information, Su Yang?" Xie Xingfang asked him.

He nodded and said, "I have a friend who can sense people from a very long distance, and she told me a few days ago that they were approaching this place."

"A few days ago?! Why did you wait until now to tell us something so important?!" Xie Wang exclaimed in a slightly angered voice.

Su Yang shook his head before looking at them with a serious expression, "Are you scared, old man?"

"W-What...?!"

Xie Wang was speechless.

"In case you forgot where you are at right now, take a look around you." Su Yang pointed at the sky, and he continued, "As long as you remain inside this formation, no harm will come to you or Xing'er."

"..."

After a moment of silence, Xie Xingfang spoke, "While that may be true, what about the people outside of this formation? As a member of the Xie Family, I have a responsibility to protect our citizens. What if the expert coming starts killing the innocent and causing havoc in the Eastern Continent while I hide inside this formation like a turtle? I'd rather sacrifice myself than to let innocent people suffer because of me."

"Xing'er..." Xie Wang looked at her with a painful expression.

Meanwhile, Su Yang showed a gentle smile on his face.

"You are truly a kind woman, Xing'er — too kind, in fact. However, if you weren't like this, I wouldn't be doing so much for you." He said to her, and he continued, "You can leave the expert to me. I won't let him harm even a single tree on this land, let alone an innocent person."

"Su Yang... what are you going to do?" Xie Xingfang asked him with a worried expression.

"There's still a few days before they reach the Continent, and I will be there waiting for them when they do." He calmly responded.

### **Chapter 581 Golden Lion Academy's Invasion 1**

"That sounds incredibly dangerous! And what do you plan on doing once you meet the people from the Holy Central Continent? Don't tell me you're going to negotiate with them, hoping they'd leave peacefully." Xie Wang asked him.

"Hahaha!" Su Yang suddenly burst loud laughing, before making a grim expression a moment later.

"Negotiation? There is no room for negotiation, as I have some personal feud with them, and once I see them, I am going to slaughter all of them."

"..."

Both Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang looked at Su Yang with a slightly nervous feeling in their hearts, as they have never felt such an intimidating aura before, and they wondered what those people had done to offend Su Yang.

"Then do you need our help with your preparations?" Xie Xingfang asked him a moment later.

He shook his head and said, "The only thing I need you to do for me is to relax and wait until everything is over."

"T-That's impossible... After all, this is also my problem, and you are doing this to help me..." Xie Xingfang said, feeling incredibly selfish and useless for letting him do everything for her.

"Don't worry too much about it since this is how I am." Su Yang said with a smile.

"T-Then can I at least come with you?" Xie Xingfang asked.

"What?! Absolutely not! Why would you want to leave the formation and deliver yourself to the enemy?! That would defeat the entire point of keeping you safe here!" Xie Wang exclaimed loudly.

"Hmm..." Su Yang looked at her with a pondering expression.

"What is your reason for wanting to follow me to the battlefield?" he asked her a moment later.

"Wha—?! Regardless of her reason, I won't allow it!" Xie Wang quickly responded.

However, Xie Xingfang ignored his words and spoke calmly, "Because I have been hiding for far too long. Besides those that have failed to capture me, I don't even know the faces of my enemies. I know that I came to the Profound Blossom Sect for protection, but I didn't plan that because of the formation."

"Instead, I came to the Profound Blossom Sect for your protection, Su Yang, and I am confident that you can protect me even if I am not inside this formation."

"You sure have a lot of confidence in me, who's even younger than yourself." Su Yang said with a smile.

"The date of one's birth is irrelevant to Cultivators like us, and that only becomes truer the stronger you are. Even though you may be younger than me by a few years, your Cultivation is already far above my

own by many, many years. If you want, I wouldn't mind calling you my Senior." Xie Xingfang said with a serious expression.

"And I promise you that I won't make things more difficult for you when we are there, as I have my own methods to protect myself."

After a moment, Su Yang nodded his head and spoke, "Well, I have never missed an opportunity to impress a beautiful woman whenever I can, and I am confident that I can protect you even if they attack me with you in my arms."

"W-Wait a moment, Su Yang! Are you seriously going to take her with you?" Xie Wang said with wide eyes.

He nodded and said, "If you are that worried, you can also come with us. And it's not like I am going alone."

"What do you mean? Who else will be coming with us?" Xie Wang asked.

"Let's just call her an expert with unfathomable power." Su Yang said.

"Unfathomable power... and a woman?" Xie Wang immediately thought about Qiuyue, who was the only person who could fit such a description in his mind.

'If she's also coming, then I don't have to worry about Xing'er safety at all...' he thought to himself.

"If there's nothing else, let's meet here tomorrow morning." Su Yang said.

The two of them nodded, and they went away to prepare shortly after.

Su Yang also returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion, and he went to find Xiao Rong.

"Xiao Rong, come with me tomorrow. I need you to be there to make sure that he doesn't run away and as insurance just in case anything goes wrong." Su Yang said to her, who calmly nodded her head.

"Where will the two of you be going tomorrow?" Qin Liangyu, who also happened to be in the room, asked him.

"Well, somebody from the Holy Central Continent will be arriving at this place soon, and I have some business with him." Su Yang said.

"The Holy Central Continent? That place really exists?" Qin Liangyu's eyes became filled with wonder.

"So even the Southern Region is aware of that place, huh?"

"Of course. Although nobody has managed to go there recently, there are records of people going to that place before."

"When the time comes, I can bring you to that place."

"Really? I cannot wait!" Qin Liangyu said.

"Anyway, you can continue doing whatever you were doing just now." Su Yang said to them before leaving their room.

Sometime later, he knocked on Qiuyue's door.

"What do you want? I still don't feel like talking to you yet." Qiuyue's voice resounded a few moments later.

A bitter smile appeared on Su Yang's face, and he spoke, "I figured that you should know that someone from the Holy Central Continent will be coming here soon, and I am going to meet him."

"Who...?" Qiuyue asked him.

"The Sect Leader of the Golden Lion Academy."

"That pervert? Why the hell would he come all the way over here? It would take even someone like him many months to reach this place." Qiuyue said in a disgruntled voice.

"Oh? You also know him?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"Yeah... That pervert jumped at me during our first meeting, so I gave him a beating until he was half-dead." Qiuyue sighed just recalling that memory.

'Is that so...? Now I have even more reasons to kill that bastard.' Su Yang nodded to himself.

## **Chapter 582 Golden Lion Academy's Invasion 2**

"Wait a second... Why are you going to meet with that pervert?" Qiuyue asked him with a frown on her face.

"Because I am going to kill him." He responded in a calm and casual voice.

"W-What...?" A surprised noise resounded inside the room, and a few moments later, she asked.

"Why would you do that?"

"Well..."

Su Yang proceeded to explain the situation to her, from what happened to Xiao Rong to Xie Xingfang's situation.

"I see..." Qiuyue mumbled.

Sometime later, she spoke in a low voice, "Do you... need me to come with you?"

"It would make things easier with you there, but it's not necessary, since I already have Xiao Rong coming with me." Su Yang said to her.

"..."

Inside the room, Qiuyue had a frown on her beautiful face. For some reason, Su Yang's last sentence had caused an uncomfortable feeling in her heart, as it made her feel like she was being replaced by Xiao Rong.

A few moments later, the door opened, and Qiuyue looked at Su Yang with a serious expression on her face. "I am coming with you," she spoke in a stern voice.

Seeing this, Su Yang merely nodded his head with a smile, and he said, "We will be leaving tomorrow."

Qiuyue nodded before quickly closing the door again.

'Heavens! If I had to look at his face for another second, my emotions would've gone out of control! That was incredibly dangerous!' Qiuyue cried inwardly afterward, feeling the beat of her heart resembling war drums.

If it had taken her all of her resolve to speak with Su Yang without blushing just now, she cannot imagine how torturous it will be for her tomorrow.

The following day, Su Yang left the Yin Yang Pavilion with Xiao Rong by his side, and Qiuyue, who was walking many meters behind them.

And after walking a few minutes, they could see Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang in the distance waiting for them.

"It's really the Goddess!" Xie Wang's blood pressure immediately soared after seeing Qiuyue's otherworldly appearance and domineering aura.

However, there was another person there that also captured his attention — the young girl walking beside Su Yang, who looked just as beautiful as Qiuyue, even resembling her appearance slightly.

'Who's that little girl?' he wondered inwardly.

In Xie Wang's eyes, Xiao Rong appeared to be Su Yang's and Qiuyue's daughter at glance, but after recalling Su Yang's young age, it was simply impossible for him to have a child at Xiao Rong's age.

"This Junior greets Senior..." Xie Wang respectfully bowed to Qiuyue when she got close enough.

"..."

Qiuyue merely glanced at him and slightly nodded her head in acknowledgment before ignoring him again.

Although it may appear disrespectful, Xie Wang was already satisfied just from her acknowledgment.

"Are you prepared to leave?" Su Yang asked the two of them.

"Yes... but..." Xie Xingfang looked at Xiao Rong with a puzzled gaze, and she asked him in a worried voice, "Who may this young lady be? And do you plan on bringing her with us?"

Su Yang nodded and said, "Don't underestimate her because of her young appearance since she's actually the strongest one here."

"W-What?" Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang looked at him with wide eyes.

Could this innocent-looking little girl really be the strongest one amongst them?

'She's even stronger than that Goddess? Impossible! I cannot even feel any spiritual energy coming from her!' Xie Wang was immediately suspicious of such claims, as it was simply too hard to believe.

When Su Yang saw the doubt on Xie Wang's face, a mysterious smile appeared on his face, and he said to him a moment later, "If you're not convinced, would you like to have a taste of her abilities?"

"What?" Xie Wang's eyes widened with surprise upon hearing his words.

Although he could feel an ominous feeling coming from Su Yang's smile, he was also very curious about Xiao Rong's strength.

"If you are worried, I can restrict her movements so that she won't move even a single limb against you. Furthermore, she will not use any techniques. All she is allowed to use is her mouth — a single breath to defeat you."

"A single breath to defeat me? Aren't you looking down on me too much, Su Yang? In case you have forgotten, I am still at the Sovereign Spirit Realm." Xie Wang said with a frown on his face, feeling as though he was mocked by Su Yang's words.

"I don't mean to look down on you, but I also don't want her to accidentally kill you right before Xing'er." Su Yang shrugged.

Xie Wang's eyebrows suddenly trembled, and he quickly shouted in anger, "You've done it now, Su Yang! If she cannot defeat me with a single breath, I will make you regret looking down on me!"

"Grandfather..." Xie Xingfang sighed.

Su Yang smiled, and he looked at Xiao Rong and said to her, "You heard everything. Defeat him in a single breath, but don't kill him."

Xiao Rong calmly nodded.

"Okay, whenever you are ready." Su Yang said to Xie Wang, who immediately began gathering his spiritual energy.

"Haaa!"

Within just a few seconds, Xie Wang used almost all of his Profound Qi to create a barrier made of spiritual energy between him and Xiao Rong.

"Go ahead!" He said after his preparations.

"You heard him." Su Yang said to her.

Hearing his words, Xiao Rong took a slightly deeper breath than normal before gently blowing it towards Xie Wang's direction.

WHOOSH!

"Wha—?!"

An immensely powerful gust appeared, and the barrier made by Xie Wang did not even last for half a second before it shattered into a million pieces.

However, that was not the end, as Xiao Rong's breath continued in Xie Wang's direction.

Pap!

Xie Wang suddenly felt as though he was hit by a steel wall, and he was sent flying thousands of meters into the distance before disappearing from their sights like a mosquito getting swatted.

"G-Grandfather!" Xie Xingfang covered her mouth from shock after witnessing this grand scene.

### **Chapter 583 Golden Lion Academy's Invasion 3**

"..."

After being hit by Xiao Rong's breath, Xie Wang landed a few miles away from the Profound Blossom Sect with a few broken bones in his body.

He laid on the ground with a dazed expression, seemingly speechless about what has just happened.

'Are people from the Holy Central Continent all this powerful?' he pondered inwardly.

If he traveled to the Holy Central Continent, will he also be able to cultivate to such an extreme level?

"Ugh... I haven't experienced this kind of injury for over a hundred years..." Xie Wang struggled to even get on his feet, before flying back to the Profound Blossom Sect.

"Grandfather! Are you okay?!" Xie Xingfang showed a surprised face when she saw his messy appearance, looking like he'd just fallen down a cliff.

"I have a few broken bones, but it's nothing life threatening..." he sighed.

Once Xie Wang returned, Su Yang extended his hand and offered a pill to him.

"Take this pill, it'll help you with your internal injuries."

Xie Wang nodded.

However, he did not immediately swallow the pill and silently admired the flawless-looking pill in his hand for a few moments, as this is his first time seeing a pill with such few impurities inside if there were any at all.

'Whoever crafted this pill must be a peak Alchemy Master...' Xie Wang silently paid respect to the creator of this pill before swallowing it.

"So potent!" He exclaimed in a shocked voice when all of his internal injury healed within just a few seconds after swallowing the pill.

"Where did you obtain this pill?" he asked Su Yang afterward.

"Not sure. I think I picked it up on the side of the road sometime ago." Su Yang casually shrugged.

"...Just say so if you don't want to tell me." Xie Wang shook his head.

"Anyway, I admit defeat, and I also want to apologize for looking down on you because of your young appearance. I'm sorry, Senior." Xie Wang bowed to Xiao Rong, who remained nonchalant.



"Now that you are aware of her abilities, let's head to the location." Su Yang said, and he turned to look at Xiao Rong. "Which direction are they coming from?"

Xiao Rong quickly pointed to the south.

"It will take at least an entire month to reach the Southern Sea from here even if we fly there nonstop..." Xie Wang said.

"Qiuyue, let's use your flying ship." Su Yang said to her.

She nodded and retrieved her large flying ship.

She then tossed the flying ship into the air, and it expanded until it was the size of a real ship.

While Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang admired the flying ship, Su Yang and the others boarded it.

Sometime later, when everyone was on the ship, Qiuyue used her spiritual energy to navigate the ship towards the south.

Meanwhile, the disciples within the Profound Blossom Sect were shocked speechless when a massive ship suddenly appeared above their Sect, and it was only after Liu Lanzhi explained to them the situation did they finally calm down.

"What a mythical treasure!"

When Su Yang and the group arrived at the Southern Sea in just a few minutes, Xie Wang expressed his admiration for the flying ship, as he had never experienced moving this fast before, nor did he imagine that it would be possible.

And while Xie Wang was focused on the flying ship, Xie Xingfang pointed towards the sandy land that was right before the Jade Sea, and she spoke, "Look at the people gathered over there! They are the Moonlight Blades!"

"What?! Let me see!" Xie Wang quickly walked beside her and looked at where she was pointing, and he could see at glance over a hundred people wearing the Moonlight Blades' uniform camping near the Jade Sea.

"Those bastards must be waiting for the people from the Holy Central Continent! It seems like we have come to the right place! I should go down there and kill every last one of them!" Xie Wang's eyes flickered with killing intent.

"Wait a second." Su Yang suddenly stopped him, and he said, "We can kill them after we gather some information."

"Su Yang, can I come with you? I'd also like to have a word with them." Xie Xingfang suddenly said.

"Of course." He nodded.

Meanwhile, at the Moonlight Blades' camping area, they quickly noticed the massive flying ship that appeared out of nowhere without making a single sound, almost as though it was a ghost ship.

"W-What the heck is that?!"

"How did it get there without making any noises?!"

They were baffled by this phenomenon.

A few moments later, they noticed three figures jumping off this flying ship and slowly descending towards their direction.

And when they saw Xie Xingfang's face among those three figures, the Moonlight Blade was immediately alerted.

"W-What's she doing here?!"

"Look beside her! That's Xie Wang! The Xie Family's Ancestor!"

"Impossible! How did the Xie Family find us?!"

"Fuck! It's over! We're all dead!"

The Moonlight Blades began panicking with some even running away.

However, before they could flee very far, Su Yang waved his sleeves, instantly creating a restriction array around them, entrapping them in a semi-transparent barrier.

"What the hell is this?!"

"Let me out of here, you bastard!"

"T-That's Su Yang?! What's he doing here with the Xie Family?!"

A few people in the Moonlight Blades recognized Su Yang's handsome face.

"Give it up. You won't break the formation even if all of you attack it for a year straight." Su Yang said to them as he approached them.

"What do you want from us?!" One of them asked him.

"I only have a few questions for you." He calmly responded.

"If we answer your questions, will you let us go?"

Su Yang nodded and said, "Of course. If you answer all of my questions, I will remove the formation and let you all go. However, if you lie even once, I will slaughter every single one of you."

#### **Chapter 584 Golden Lion Academy's Invasion 4**

"What do you want to know?! We will tell you everything we know!" The Moonlight Blades immediately answered.

"My first question is how did you guys manage to travel to the Holy Central Continent?" Su Yang then asked.

"The Leader has this spiritual treasure that can transport people to the Holy Central Continent, but it only works one way, so it cannot be used to bring them back."

"Who is your Leader?" Su Yang asked.

"We don't know! In fact, only the higher-ups are allowed to meet the Leader! We have never seen him before!"

"However, we've been told that the Leader will appear to greet the guests from the Holy Central Continent when they finally arrive!"

"Is that so?" Su Yang nodded.

"Then where's your hideout? I heard it's impossible to find."

The Moonlight Blades turned to look at each other with perplexed expressions. If they reveal their hideout and the higher-ups find out, they will surely be killed even if they escape from this place alive.

"If you don't want to answer my question, I can simply kill one of you at a time until someone gives me an answer." Su Yang suddenly said with a grim expression, sending chills down their spine.

"I-I will talk!" One of them quickly said, and he continued, "The reason our hideout has remained hidden for so long is because we don't have a hideout in the first place..."

"What? Then how do you communicate with each other?" Xie Wang spoke with a frown.

"It's a one-way communication. Whenever there is a mission, we are contacted by the higher-ups through multiple unique methods, such as feeding rats with messages and using techniques to control them."

"So if we want to get rid of you bunch, we'll have to start cleaning up from the top, huh?" Su Yang nodded.

He then turned to look at Xie Wang and said, "I have changed my mind. Instead of killing them after we have our information, we should kill them when their Leader arrives. If we kill them now, their Leader will become suspicious."

"Even if you say that... How are we going to keep them here after all of this? It's not like you can keep them inside that formation since it'll definitely alert someone." Xie Wang said to him.

"Don't worry, I have an idea." Su Yang said with a smile.

"W-Wait a moment! I thought you said that you wouldn't kill us if we answered your questions!"

"That's right! Are you going to go back on your words, you bastard?!"

The people inside the formation immediately began cursing at Su Yang.

Seeing this, Su Yang merely shook his head and spoke in a calm voice, "I only said that I'd let you leave this formation. Who said anything about letting you leave with your lives? However, even though I said that, I won't be the one killing you guys."

He then pointed to Xie Wang and continued, "You guys have been targeting Xing'er for many years now, I'm sure that the Xie Family has some built-up anger they'd like to relieve."

The people there quickly turned to look at Xie Wang, who was staring at them with murderous eyes, looking like a hungry tiger before its prey.

"P-Please! Have mercy! We are only doing as we're told! In the first place, the only person interested in Lady Xie is our Leader!" One of them pleaded.

However, Xie Xingfang coldly snorted and said, "Do you think this is just about the Moonlight Blades trying to capture me? You guys have been trying to ruin my Xie Family for many years now, not to mention the countless incidents you guys have caused around the entire Eastern Continent!"

"..."

The Moonlight Blades were speechless, as everything Xie Xingfang said was true.

The main purpose of the Moonlight Blades was to conquer the Eastern Continent and spread chaos and fear as far and wide as possible. It was an evil organization that has no redeeming qualities. In fact, the entire world would be much more peaceful without their existence.

"Xing'er, you can deal with them all you want later. For now, I will erase their memories, making it appear as though we were never here in the first place." Su Yang suddenly said.

"You... can erase memories?" Xie Wang looked at him with a bewildered look. Is there anything in this world that he cannot do?

A few moments later, Su Yang stepped inside the formation without any hesitation.

When the Moonlight Blades members saw this, they wasted no time and immediately attacked him.

"Get him!"

And over a hundred Cultivators between the Elementary Spirit Realm and the Profound Spirit Realm rushed at him simultaneously.

Seeing this, Su Yang merely shook his head with a calm expression before his index finger glowed a golden light.

"You guys should enjoy your last few days of being alive before it ends..." Su Yang said to them as he casually dodged their attacks while poking them on the forehead at the same time.

The Moonlight Blades members rapidly collapsed on the floor, and within just a few moments, they were all effortlessly knocked unconscious by Su Yang.

Su Yang removed the formation afterward.

"They won't remember anything that has happened in the last hour when they wake up. Let's return to the flying ship for now. Once their leader shows up, we can deal with them once and for all." He said to Xie Xingfang.

"Even if you say that, where are we going to hide with such a massive and eye-catching flying ship floating in the air?" Xie Wang asked him. "They will see us even from miles away."

"Don't worry, this flying ship can do more than just traveling at a fast speed; it can even camouflage itself with the background and make it appear invisible, and unless they have someone with a powerful enough spiritual sense to see through the illusion, they won't be able to see or sense it even if we are right above them." Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"..." Xie Wang was speechless, but he was not too surprised, as he was beginning to grow numb after being shocked so many times by Su Yang and his companions.

### **Chapter 585 Golden Lion Academy's Invasion 5**

"Qiuyue, can you activate the concealment array within the ship? We'll be camping up here for a few days." Su Yang said to her after returning to the ship.

Qiuyue nodded, and a few moments later, a transparent barrier surrounded the entire ship.

"This is it? Are we invisible now?" Xie Wang asked him.

"Yes, and unless they bump into us or have someone skilled enough to see through the formation, they won't even feel our presence." Su Yang said.

"Then all we have to do now is wait for their Leader to appear..." Xie Wang said as he stared at the unconscious people below them.

A few minutes after Su Yang wiped their memories, the Moonlight Blades' members began waking up one by one, and they were all completely baffled by the mysterious situation.

"W-What the hell happened? Why were we all sleeping?" One of them said.

"I... can't remember anything... "

"I don't recall anything, either!"

Meanwhile, a few thousand miles away from their location, a middle-aged man with a large, ugly scar on his face stood before ten other figures, and all of them wore the Moonlight Blades' uniform.

"Leader Lai, the reinforcements from the Holy Central Continent should arrive within the next three days," said one of the figures.

The middle-aged man, who was the leader of the Moonlight Blades nodded, and he spoke with an expression that could hardly contain his excitement, "At long last... after spending countless efforts throughout many decades and sacrificing thousands of our soldiers, we can finally take down the Xie Family once and for all!"

"Congratulations, Leader Lai!"

"Congratulations, Leader!"

"The Eastern Continent is finally yours, Leader!"

The ten figures began praising him, who burst out laughing, "Once the Eastern Continent is in my hands, I will finally be able to exact my revenge on the Xie Family! I will make that bastard Xie Yimu regret ruining my life, and I am going to do so by ravaging his beloved daughter right before his very eyes! If he dies an early death, I will play with her body on your damn grave instead, Xie Yimu!"

The Leader's aura radiated with killing intent, his voice filled with deep hatred.

"Leader, I have a question." One of the figures suddenly said. "Can we really trust the reinforcements from the Holy Central Continent?"

"What if they want more than what we offered?"

"Isn't it a bit too late to ask that now?" The Leader said, and he continued, "Even if they decide to betray us, as long as I can have my revenge, nothing else matters."

"..."

The ten figures became silent.

Meanwhile, somewhere in the Jade Sea, a massive ship could be seen approaching the Eastern Continent at an extreme speed.

"Patriarch, there's another Dragon Eel approaching us!" Someone on the ship alerted Patriarch Gold.

**\*ROOOOOOAR!\***

A powerful roar suddenly resounded, and a massive serpent-like beast leaped out of the water with its fangs aimed at the moving ship.

"Get lost!"

Patriarch Gold suddenly appeared in front of the Dragon Eel and punched it with his fist glowing gold.

"Heavenly Lion's Smash!"

Boom!

A massive hole opened up in the Dragon Eel's body exactly where Patriarch Gold had punched, instantly killing it.

"As expected of the Patriarch! He can kill even a peak Heavenly Spirit Realm Dragon Eel in a single strike!"

"Hahaha! He's the Sect Leader of the Golden Lion Academy for a reason!"

The people on the ship quickly celebrated Patriarch Gold's overwhelming victory.

"Without Patriarch Gold, we would've never made it this far. The Jade Sea is simply too dangerous — even more so than I'd imagined."

"Indeed. We have been attacked constantly ever since we began our sail many months ago, and the sea creatures were all between the Earth Spirit Realm and the Heavenly Spirit Realm with even a few at the Sovereign Spirit Realm."

"If the surface of the Jade Sea is already this dangerous, I do not want to imagine what it would be like deep within the Jade Sea."

"Can you not talk about that? My body is shivering just from the mention of it..."

After defeating the Dragon Eel, Patriarch Gold returned to the ship and said to the crew, "We should arrive in the Eastern Continent in a few days. Prepare yourselves, because we are going to have some fun once we get there!"

The entire ship trembled with people shouting from excitement shortly afterward.

"Xing'er, you can sleep in any of the available rooms." Su Yang said to her once the sky turned black.

"Thank you, but I don't feel tired at all." Xie Xingfang said.

"Would you like to watch the stars with me?" she suddenly asked him.

"It would be my honor." Su Yang said.

A beautiful smile appeared on Xie Xingfang's face, and she gently patted the floor beside her.

"You can sit here," she said.

Su Yang nodded, and he sat beside Xie Xingfang on the floor.

Once he sat down, Xie Xingfang returned to staring at the flickering stars in the sky and spoke in an admiring voice, "I have never seen so many stars in the sky before."

"Maybe it's because I am always stuck inside my room by my father's will and I never get the chance to experience this kind of situation before. However, I don't blame him, as I know it's for my own safety."

"But ever since I met you, Su Yang, I feel as though I am leaving my room more and spending more time in the outside world."

Su Yang smiled and said, "I have met many people in similar situations — people who are born with elite statuses along with invisible shackles that bind their freedom. And for some reason, I always feel the desire to help them escape their shackles."

He then turned to look at her with a handsome smile on his face and said, "If you ever need help removing those shackles, I will gladly assist you."

"Su Yang..." Xie Xingfang looked at him with a slightly dazed face, seemingly mesmerized by his dazzling smile.

### **Chapter 586 Golden Lion Academy's Invasion 6**

After staring at Su Yang's handsome face for a good minute Xie Xingfang finally snapped out of her daze, and she spoke with a reddened face, "Thank you, Su Yang."

And afraid that she might continue staring at his face, Xie Xingfang returned to gazing at the stars.

Meanwhile, standing on the other side of the ship, Xie Wang sighed inwardly, 'If only she could accept Su Yang despite his flaws, our Xie Family will flourish to a level never seen before.'

Two days later, Xie Wang, who has been watching the Moonlight Blades' every movement for the past two days suddenly said, "Hey! Look over there! There's a new group of people approaching them, and they are all at the Earth Spirit Realm with one of them even at the Heavenly Spirit Realm! I am willing to bet that the person at the Heavenly Spirit Realm is the Moonlight Blades' Leader."

Su Yang and Xie Xingfang went to his side to see the situation below.

A group of 11 individuals, all wrapped in black clothes, approached the Moonlight Blades' camp.

"It's the Elders! The Elders are here!"

The guard standing watch in the camp suddenly alerted everyone there, and a few moments later, every person in the camp appeared before these 11 figures and lowered their heads to them.

"What's the situation?" One of the Elders suddenly spoke.

"Reporting to the Elders and the Leader! We received a message from the Holy Central Continent's reinforcements just a few hours ago! They are expecting to arrive at the Eastern Continent by tomorrow noon!"

"Good. Then has anything suspicious happened around here lately?" The Elder continued to ask.

"Nothing suspicious has—"

Just as the man was about to say nothing suspicious has happened to them, he recalled that time when everyone was mysteriously knocked unconscious without being able to remember anything just two days ago.

"Actually, something weird did happen. Although we don't know why or how it happened, we were all knocked unconscious for an unknown amount of time, and when we woke up, we couldn't remember the reason for our unconsciousness."

"What kind of nonsense is that?" The Elders looked at the man with frowns on their faces.

People don't just get knocked unconscious for no reason, after all.

"Wait a second... let me see your head." Leader Lai suddenly stepped forward and extended his hand, touching the man's forehead.

A few seconds later, he exclaimed, "Their memories have been altered! Someone manipulated their memories!"

"What?! Who would do such a thing?! And what for?!" The Elders exclaimed.

"Who's there?!" The Leader suddenly felt three presence appear out of thin air not too far away from them, causing him to turn to look in that direction.

In the air, Su Yang, Xie Xingfang, and Xie Wang were descending from the sky.

When the Moonlight Blades' members that had their memories wiped saw Su Yang, they felt an indescribable feeling of fear in their hearts. Although they do not remember him, their hearts could instinctively remember it.

"Xie Xingfang?!?!"

When Leader Lai saw her beautiful figure, he was immediately stunned.

"If you try to run away, I will kill you before you can even take one step." Xie Wang spoke in a cold voice while restricting their movements with pressure from his Sovereign Spirit Realm Cultivation base.

'That's Xie Wang! What the hell is the Ancestor of the Xie Family doing all the way out here?!' Leader Lai cried inwardly.



"You are the Moonlight Blades' Leader, right? Let me see your face!" Xie Wang waved his sleeves, causing the cover around Leader Lai's face to tear apart.

"You are General Lai!"

When Xie Xingfang saw the middle-aged man and the ugly scar on his face, she immediately recognized him.

"General Lai? That bastard who committed treason as the General of the Xie Family's army 100 years ago? You were alive this entire time?" Xie Wang also recognized him, as his treason had caused a massive uproar within the Eastern Continent when it happened.

"So the Xie Family still remembers me, huh? That's right, I am indeed General Lai who once led the Xie Family's elite army, but after barely escaping with my life, I have created the Moonlight Blades with only one purpose — to make the Xie Family pay for ruining my life and take over the Eastern Continent!"

"You created the Moonlight Blades just for the sake of revenge?! Are you insane! Furthermore, you were the one who ruined your own life! How dare you blame my family for your own mistakes! If you hadn't betrayed the Xie Family — the Eastern Continent with your ludicrous ambitions, you could've become one of the greatest Generals in history!" Xie Xingfang said in a loud voice, her tone filled with anger.

"What's wrong with having a grand ambition?! It is ambitions that drive all Cultivators to greater heights! Without ambitions, can you even be considered alive?!" Leader Lai roared back.

"There's nothing wrong with having ambitions, but there is also a limit! When your ambition is to rule over an entire Continent through manipulation and destruction, it has crossed that limit!"

"Nonsense! Hypocrite! I am merely doing what the Xie Family is currently doing!"

"My family's method of ruling is completely different from your term of 'ruling'! And we don't treat our own people as slaves! Don't you dare compare us to you!" Xie Xingfang said.

"You can stop wasting your breath on him, Xing'er. People who are blinded by their ambitions — people like him cannot be reasoned with." Su Yang said to her while shaking his head.

He then turned to look at Leader Lai and spoke, "Now, before we kill all of you, why don't you let me see the treasure that allowed you to send people to the Holy Central Continent? Although I don't personally need it, there are many people who would love to have their hands on that thing."

Leader Lai looked at Su Yang with narrowed eyes and spoke, "Su Yang, huh? I didn't expect the Eastern Continent's number one genius to show up in this place. Why don't we team up instead? I'll let you have half of the Eastern Continent and that woman beside you if you help me rule the place. With your talents, I'm sure you can't stand being ordered around by the Xie Family."

## **Chapter 587 Golden Lion Academy's Invasion 7**

"You want me to team up with you to conquer the Eastern Continent?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows, seemingly surprised that Leader Lai was shameless enough to ask him such a question right before the Xie Family.

"Don't listen to his nonsense..." Xie Wang shook his head.

However, Su Yang smiled and said, "What do I gain by teaming up with you?"

"You..." Xie Wang looked at him with wide eyes.

Leader Lai's eyes flickered with hope in this desperate situation, and he quickly spoke, "Everything! I can give you anything you want! If you do not have money, I will give you so much money that you cannot spend it all! If you want fame, I will make you the most famous person on the Eastern Continent! And if Xie Xingfang is not good enough for you, or you are simply bored of her, I can make all of the women in the Eastern Continent obey your every command!"

"Hoh? That's quite the tempting offer. However, what if I say that I am not content with just the Eastern Continent? What if I want to rule every Continent in this world?" Su Yang said.

"Y-You want to rule the world?" Leader Lai looked at him with wide eyes, as even he did not expect Su Yang to have such ambitions.

"What? Don't tell me that you cannot help me rule the world? Even though you said that you'd give me everything." Su Yang shook his head in disappointment.

"W-Wait! If that's what you want, I will arrange for it! Once we rule over the Eastern Continent, we can start working on the other Continents, and eventually, we will rule even the Holy Central Continent!" Leader Lai said without thinking.

"Hahaha!" Su Yang burst out laughing, before turning to look at Xie Wang and spoke, "Did you really make an idiot like him a general?"

He then returned to Leader Lai and continued, "There is nothing you offer me that I cannot already get myself. Fame? That means nothing to me. Wealth? All of the things I desire cannot be bought with money. Women? I already have enough beauties to keep me entertained for thousands of years. As for ruling the world... While that does sound interesting, I have more important matters in my life to worry about. And if I really decide to rule the world one day, I sure as hell wouldn't need any help!"

Not just Leader Lai but even Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang were dumbfounded by Su Yang's words, as he made it seem like there was nothing in this world that he cannot obtain.

"Now that the negotiations are over, what are you going to do?" Su Yang looked at Leader Lai with a nonchalant expression.

"W-Wait! You want the spiritual treasure that can transfer people to the Holy Central Continent, right?! If you let me go, I will give it to you!" He quickly said.

"Or I can just kill you right now and take it off your dead body without any hassle."

"Good luck with that, because I did not bring the treasure with me, and I hid it in a place you'll never find!" Leader Lai laughed arrogantly.

"Is that so?" Su Yang then turned to look in the sky at the invisible flying ship.

"Xiao Rong, come down here for a moment." He said to her.

A second later, Xiao Rong's small figure appeared beside him like a ghost, shocking everybody there.

"If I recall correctly, Phantom Cats are especially good at finding treasures. See if you can find this guy's treasures. It should emit the same spiritual energy as him since he'd used it before." Su Yang pointed at Leader Lai, who held a dumbfounded expression on his face.

Xiao Rong nodded and turned to look at Leader Lai with a narrowed gaze.

"?!?!"

Leader Lai felt as though all of his clothes and even his skin were stripped before Xiao Rong's sharp gaze.

After staring at Leader Lai for a moment, Xiao Rong released her Ancient Realm cultivation base, sweeping the entire Eastern Continent within just a few seconds.

"Xiao Rong found it. Be right back."

Xiao Rong suddenly disappeared from the scene.

"..."

"..."

"..."

After a few moments of silence, Xiao Rong's figure reappeared beside Su Yang, and in her hands was an ordinary-looking yellow talisman.

When Leader Lai saw this yellow talisman, his eyes widened with shock, and his jaw dropped to the ground.

"What?! Impossible! H-How?!" he exclaimed in a terrified voice, almost as though he was staring at a ghost.

Seeing Leader Lai's reaction, Su Yang knew that Xiao Rong had found the right thing, and he spoke with a smile on his face, "What's the matter? Judging by your reaction, I am pretty confident that this yellow talisman is exactly what I'm looking for."

"..."

Leader Lai remained silent, as he was still shocked speechless by what had just happened.

Even Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang looked at Xiao Rong with a dazed expression, as they cannot even comprehend what had just happened.

Due to their high innate mental strength, Ghost Cats are able to use their spiritual sense for an insanely wide range, not to mention Xiao Rong's Ancient Realm cultivation base. Furthermore, Xiao Rong is a Phantom Cat with superior talents and abilities than Ghost Cats, and in a small place like the Eastern Continent, she can easily search the entire continent with her spiritual sense.

This is another reason why Ghost Cats are often sought after, as their abilities to find spiritual treasures were the best even within the Divine Heavens.

"Now that I have what I need, there is no longer any reason to keep you alive, right?" Su Yang said, and he turned to look at Xie Wang.

"You can do whatever you want to them. I'll return to the ship." After saying that, he created a restriction array and trapped the Moonlight Blades again, before returning to the ship with Xiao Rong.

### **Chapter 588 Golden Lion Academy's Invasion 8**

"What should we do to them, Grandfather?" Xie Xingfang asked him after Su Yang left them alone.

"I'd like to kill all of them right now, but we will give them the proper punishment after we return to the family." Xie Wang said.

"Okay." Xie Xingfang nodded.

"Hahaha!" Leader Lai suddenly started laughing.

"What's so funny?" Xie Wang looked at him with a frown. "I will kill you right now if you do not shut up."

"Then go ahead and kill me!" Leader Lai spread his arms with a provoking expression on his face, and he continued, "Even if you kill me, you cannot prevent the inevitable! Once the reinforcement from the Holy Central Continent arrives tomorrow, the Eastern Continent will become like a wildfire, and my revenge will be fulfilled either way! Hahahaha!"

"You crazy bastard..." Xie Wang narrowed his eyes at Leader Lai, feeling a strong urge to kill him.

However, Xie Xingfang suddenly spoke, "Unfortunately for you, Su Yang will be here to prevent that."

Leader Lai looked at her with a mocking expression, and he spoke, "Su Yang? What the hell can he do? Although he may be the number one genius here, compared to the experts in the Holy Central Continent, he's as insignificant as an ant! And it will only take a single finger for the expert coming from the Holy Central Continent to kill him!"

"You may not know this, but the person coming here is actually one of the peak experts from the Holy Central Continent! He is even the Sect Master of one of the largest Sect on the Continent, and his cultivation is even more impressive, being at the fourth level Sovereign Spirit Realm! Hahaha! And you are telling me that a mere junior at the Heavenly Spirit Realm has what it takes to protect this place from him? You are dreaming!"

Xie Xingfang remained calm even after hearing his words, and she said, "No matter who is coming from the Holy Central Continent, they won't even get the chance to step on this land!"

"Hahaha..." Xie Wang burst out laughing, and he said, "Sovereign Spirit Realm? You have no idea what you're up against, General Lai! If you think Su Yang is alone then you're sorely mistaken! He should be the least of your worries!"

"What the hell do you mean by that?" Leader Lai immediately frowned.

"I'm saying that there's someone stronger that's backing Su Yang! In fact, I had a taste of her powers not too long ago! I wasn't even able to last a second under a single breath from her! Even if these people

coming are at the peak of the Sovereign Spirit Realm, they won't be able to defeat her!" Xie Wang spoke with pride despite mentioning his defeat.

"W-What?! That's impossible! How could such a powerful individual exist in this place without anyone knowing?!" Leader Lai immediately doubted his words.

"There is a saying that all of the true experts within this world remain hidden from the rest of the world, so it's not weird for one or two unknown experts to show up out of thin air every once in a while." Xie Wang shrugged his shoulders.

"And if you still don't believe me, remember what happened not too long ago. You just witnessed this very expert achieve the impossible."

"D-Don't tell me that the expert you are speaking of is that little girl?!" Leader Lai exclaimed.

Xie Wang did not respond and merely showed a wide smile on his face.

"Anyway, you should try your best to enjoy your time inside this formation. It'll be the last few moments of your life, after all."

Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang returned to the flying ship shortly later, leaving the Moonlight Blades' members trapped within Su Yang's formation.

"What are you all doing?! Hurry up and break this formation!" Leader Lai shouted at the people inside.

"Yes, Leader!"

The Moonlight Blades Elders began attacking the formation with their Earth Spirit Realm cultivation base, and Leader Lai also began attacking the formation with his Heavenly Spirit Realm cultivation base.

However, the formation remained unchanged even after taking countless techniques from them for many hours.

"Impossible! How is this formation so powerful when he took so little time to create it?! It shouldn't be this sturdy and powerful!" Leader Lai gasped for air after running out of spiritual energy from attacking the formation.

Even the other members laid on the floor with exhausted expressions.

Meanwhile, on the flying ship, Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang casually watched them trying to break out of the formation, feeling somewhat entertained by their pointless efforts.

"Su Yang, how confident are you with that formation?" Xie Wang asked him sometime later.

"Although it's not very powerful, it should keep them inside for about a week even if they continuously attack it without rest." Su Yang casually responded.

"By the way, what do you think about those people coming from the Holy Central Continent? General Lai said that they are peak experts over there." Xie Wang suddenly asked him.

"He's not lying." Su Yang said, and he continued, "The individual coming here is the Sect Leader of a Sect called the Golden Lion Academy, and they are one of the top three Sects over there."

"Do you think he's powerful enough to subdue the entire Eastern Continent by himself if you guys were not here?"

Su Yang nodded, "Without a doubt. Not including us, the strongest person in the Eastern Continent is you, who has only recently entered the Sovereign Spirit Realm. If you want comparisons, even if you trained for another thousand years, you still wouldn't be able to defeat him. Even if all of the Cultivators at the Heavenly Spirit Realm attack him at once, he would still win with ease."

"He's that powerful...?" Xie Wang felt a drop of sweat roll down his cheeks after hearing Su Yang's words.

"Well, that's only natural, as he was born in the Holy Central Continent, where the Profound Qi is much denser and higher in quality compared to this place."

"I see..." Xie Wang nodded.

### **Chapter 589 Golden Lion Academy's Invasion 9**

"By the way... that treasure you obtained from General Lai... can it really send someone to the Holy Central Continent?" Xie Wang asked Su Yang sometime later with a serious expression.

"Do you want to go to the Holy Central Continent?" Su Yang smiled at his obvious intentions.

"Yes!" Xie Wang nodded, not even bothering to beat around the bush.

If he could go to the Holy Central Continent that is regarded as a Cultivator's heaven, perhaps he might be able to further improve his cultivation base. At his current age and with his talents, Xie Wang was aware of his slim chances for another breakthrough, and entering the Sovereign Spirit Realm was already a miracle.

Su Yang then said, "After examining this talisman, I can say for sure that it has the ability to transport people. However, we don't really know if it'll really transport you to the Holy Central Continent or somewhere else in the world. Perhaps the Moonlight Blades merely got lucky with their location and ended up in the Holy Central Continent."

"I am willing to test the talisman!" Xie Wang quickly volunteered.

"You might end up in the middle of the Jade Sea, you know?" Su Yang said.

"I don't care even if I end up at the bottom of the Jade Sea! As long as there's a chance that I can go to the Holy Central Continent, I am willing to take the risk!" Xie Wang said.

Su Yang smiled at his eagerness and said, "You know... If you really want to go to the Holy Central Continent, I can bring you there with the flying ship. It won't take more than a few minutes, and it has zero risks involved."

"R-Really?! Can you really do that?!" Xie Wang's eyes widened with shock. But when he recalled the flying ship's speed, his excitement skyrocketed.

Su Yang nodded and said, "I plan on visiting the Holy Central Continent after dealing with the person coming from that place anyway. It won't make much of a difference if I brought along a few people with me."

"Thank you! I won't forget this debt for the rest of my life!" Xie Wang quickly bowed to him.

"You're exaggerating. I don't need anything in return." Su Yang shook his head.

"Anyway, there's less than a day left before they arrive. I'm going to cultivate and prepare myself." Su Yang said to him before disappearing into the ship.

Once Su Yang left the scene, Xie Xingfang said to Xie Wang, "I never thought there'd be a day where the Xie Family would owe someone a debt that cannot be paid fully."

"Do you finally feel like giving yourself to him now?" Xie Wang asked her with a wide smile on his face.

"That's not a very funny joke, grandfather."

"Who said I was joking?" Xie Wang shook his head and said, "If I was a woman, I'd be willing to do anything just to be with him."

Xie Xingfang looked at him with a weird expression, but she couldn't refute his words.

"I know you want him to be exclusive, but the truth is, men with status and power are more often than not shared by many women. Of course, there also exist women who have multiple husbands at their beckoning. If you are looking for someone like Su Yang but without the other women, then you might as well be looking for a real dragon."

"Then why does my father only have one wife?" Xie Xingfang asked him. "What about you, grandfather? Where are your parents?"

Xie Wang laughed out loud after hearing her words, and he spoke, "Although I may not look like it, I used to be quite the playboy back in my prime days with over a hundred beauties as my partner simultaneously. Though, I am now too old to find any enjoyment in that kind of stuff. As for your father... he also used to have many partners. However, after meeting your mother, he also stopped seeing other women. But unlike my situation, it was your mother who used her charms to convince him."

"You two are..." Xie Xingfang looked at Xie Wang with a dumbfounded expression, clearly speechless about their history.

"And before you start having weird ideas, just remember that Su Yang's not a normal Cultivator but a Dual Cultivator. His life revolves around many partners in his life."

"...I know, grandfather... I know..." Xie Xingfang sighed, and she spoke a moment later, "I'm going to rest now. I'll need as much energy as I can get for tomorrow..."

Once Xie Wang was alone, he returned to watching the Moonlight Blades members trying to break out of Su Yang's formation.

"Keep struggling, you little ants. The more you struggle, the more despair you will feel." He mumbled with a slight smile on his face.

Time passed exceedingly fast, and within the blink of an eye, an entire day has passed.

"Master, they're here." Xiao Rong suddenly appeared in Su Yang's room like a ghost and warned him, who had been sitting on the bed with his eyes closed.

Su Yang slowly opened his eyes, and a profound flicker appeared within his gaze.

"Let's greet our visitors, shall we?" He said as he got off the bed.

After leaving his room, Su Yang went to notify everyone in the flying ship regarding the situation.

"So they are finally here..." Xie Wang narrowed his eyes with a serious expression.

"I will greet them with the old man first. Don't show yourselves for now." Su Yang said to the three beauties.

"Un." Xiao Rong nodded.

"What a shame. I was looking forward to beating him up some more." Qiuyue said with a calm expression.

"Be careful, Grandfather, Su Yang..." Xie Xingfang said to them with her fists tightly grasped into a fist. Although she showed a calm appearance, she couldn't help but feel nervous about the whole situation inwardly.

Seeing this, Su Yang gently grabbed her hands and spoke in a soft voice, "Relax. As long as I am here, even if the entire Holy Central Continent were present, I would not let them touch a single hair on your body."

After hearing Su Yang's soothing and feeling his warm touch, Xie Xingfang immediately felt more relaxed, and she nodded with a rosy face, "Thank you, Su Yang..."

A few moments later, Su Yang and Xie Wang left the flying ship.

### **Chapter 590 Meeting With the Golden Lion Academy**

"Are you sure we should meet them by ourselves? Wouldn't it be safer to have one of the experts with us?" Xie Wang said to him after they left the flying ship.

"Don't worry, they won't hurt you." Su Yang said with a smile.

A few moments later, they arrived at the Jade Sea.

"I can already sense them. Let's go greet our guests." Su Yang said before flying above the Jade Sea.

However, not even half a minute later, a large and ugly-looking fish leaped out of the water with its jaws wide open and aimed at Su Yang.

Su Yang merely glanced at the fish before retrieving his sword and cutting it in half with ease.

"They are more aggressive than I'd thought." Su Yang said afterward.



"Of course. They will attack you even if you are clearly stronger than them, almost like it's their nature to attack anything in sight, and the sea creatures will only become stronger the further you travel. This is why nobody dares to travel the Jade Sea."

After flying for a few minutes and slaying over a dozen sea creatures, Su Yang could finally see a large ship in the distance with his bare eyes.

"No wonder why they dared to sail the Jade Sea. They have such a profound spiritual treasure." Xie Wang expressed awe after seeing the ship that was emitting a powerful aura.

Just like Qiuyue's flying ship, the ship from the Holy Central Continent is a spiritual treasure with many defensive functions, allowing them to traverse the Jade Sea without fearing that it might be destroyed by the sea creatures.

Meanwhile, on the ship, Patriarch Gold also noticed Su Yang and Xie Wang's presence.

"One at the Sovereign Spirit Realm and one at the Heavenly Spirit Realm... Are they with you guys?" Patriarch Gold turned to look at the Moonlight Blades messenger by his side.

"N-No! Although I do not recognize the person with the Heavenly Spirit Realm, that expert at the Sovereign Spirit Realm must be the Xie Family's Ancestor, Xie Wang!" said the Moonlight Blades messenger.

"Xie Family? The current ruler of the Eastern Continent, huh? Did they know about our arrival beforehand?" Patriarch Gold asked again.

"That's not possible! Even if they somehow found out about our plans, they shouldn't be here! Something must have happened to the Moonlight Blades!"

"Well, it does not matter what they are trying to do. I can handle the two of them by myself." Patriarch Gold said before he jumped off the ship and soared towards Su Yang and Xie Wang.

During his flight, a massive sea creature almost as big as the ship at the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm leaped out of the water and tried to bite Patriarch Gold.

However, Patriarch Gold merely snorted before slaying the thing with a single fist.

When Xie Wang saw Patriarch Gold's sharp aura, his eyes widened with shock.

"That man's very powerful! Much stronger than I am! Are you sure we don't need any backup?" Xie Wang said with a worried frown.

"Are you really an expert at the Sovereign Spirit Realm? I have already told you not to worry. I don't know what else to say." Su Yang shook his head.

A few moments later, Patriarch Gold arrived before them with a domineering aura.

"What the hell do you weaklings want?" He said to Xie Wang.

"Are you Patriarch Gold from the Holy Central Continent?" Xie Wang wanted confirmation.

"Hoh? You know of me? For someone hundreds of thousands of miles away to know of my name, I must be more popular than I'd thought." Patriarch Gold spoke with a proud smile on his face.

"What is your purpose for coming to the Eastern Continent? If you came here with good intentions, I can guarantee you a satisfactory experience here, as my family rules this place. However, if you are here to cause trouble..." Xie Wang stared at Patriarch Gold with narrowed eyes.

"Hahaha! Are you threatening me? With your strength? How laughable!"

Patriarch Gold was laughing so loud that it made both the Jade Sea and Xie Wang tremble.

Once he stopped laughing, Patriarch Gold spoke with a grin on his face, "I have only one purpose here! Bring me the woman with the Divine Body! Since you are from the Xie Family, you should know who I am talking about!"

Xie Wang gritted his teeth after hearing Patriarch Gold's words. Although he'd already expected something like this, it still made his blood boil in anger.

"What are you going to do if I refuse?" Xie Wang spoke a moment later.

"Refuse...? Hahaha! I am not asking you for permission! I am ordering you to bring me the woman! And weaklings like you do not have the luxury to refuse!" Patriarch Gold suddenly released his cultivation base, causing a powerful pressure to appear in the area.

"..."

Xie Wang felt as though he was an ant before Patriarch Gold's powerful pressure. It was a powerless feeling that he never thought he'd experience ever again.

"If you do not bring me the woman with the Divine Body, I will flip the entire Eastern Continent upside-down until I find her! And my friends on the ship will also join in on the fun!"

"This fucking bastard..." Xie Wang's body trembled in anger, and his eyes flickered with killing intent.

"I wouldn't do that if I were you, old man." Patriarch Gold snickered after sensing the killing intent.

"Even if the two of you attacked me at once, you won't be able to defeat me, much less the twenty-five Heavenly Spirit Realm experts on the ship that I've brought with me."

"Anyway, I won't waste my breath any longer! You have ten seconds to decide!"

"Like hell we are—"

Just as Xie Wang opened his mouth, Su Yang interrupted him and said, "Okay, we will bring you the woman."

"What the hell are you thinking, Su Yang?!" Xie Wang asked him in a suppressed angry voice.

"Just shut up and let me handle it." Su Yang quickly said to him, and he continued, "Give us a few minutes. The woman with the Divine Body is actually not too far away from here."

"Oh? If what you say is true, then I will give you an hour to bring me this woman." Patriarch Gold said with a pleasantly surprised expression on his fierce-looking face.

"I will be back in ten minutes." Su Yang said.

"Don't even think about running away, young man, because I will find you no matter where you hide." Patriarch Gold said to him.

"Hahaha... you don't have to worry about that, as I have no plans on running away. In fact, this old man can stay here with you while I get the woman for you." Su Yang responded in a mysterious voice, causing Patriarch Gold to frown.

'What does this brat have planned...?' he wondered inwardly.

"Are you nuts, Su Yang?! How dare you leave me here alone with that crazy bastard!" Xie Wang quickly rejected his idea.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "If you continue acting so cowardly, your cultivation won't improve even if you went to the Holy Central Continent."

"W-What do you mean by that?!" Xie Wang looked at him with wide eyes.

However, before Xie Wang could even receive an answer from him, Su Yang turned around and flew back to the Eastern Continent, leaving him alone.

#### **Chapter 591 Courting Death Would Be an Understatemen**

Once Su Yang disappeared from the place, Patriarch Gold said to Xie Wang, "If you even move a little bit, I will kill you."

"..." Xie Wang frowned, but he was truly powerless at this moment.

'To think I once believed that I would be invincible once I reach the Sovereign Spirit Realm! The Cultivation world is truly harsh,' he sighed inwardly.

After warning Xie Wang, Patriarch Gold returned to the ship.

"Sect Leader, are we really going to leave if they give us the woman?" One of the people there asked him in a low voice.

"What do you think?" Patriarch Gold grinned and said, "Even if they voluntarily hand me the woman, I didn't travel hundreds of thousands of miles across the Jade Sea while risking my life just to return with a single woman! Once they hand me the woman, we are going to enjoy the Eastern Continent to our fullest extent!"

Meanwhile, on the flying ship, when Xie Xingfang saw Su Yang returning so quickly and without her grandfather by his side, she quickly asked him in a nervous voice, "Su Yang! What happened to my grandfather?!"

"Don't worry, he's keeping our guests entertained right now." He said with a smile.

"Then why have you returned?" she raised her eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

"I have come to pick you up. Don't you want to meet the people who are trying to ruin your life?" He said.

Xie Xingfang looked at him with a dazed expression before nodding her head.

"Good." Su Yang then said out loud, "Qiuyue, Xiao Rong, you can also come with us. However, keep your presence hidden until I tell you to come out."

A few moments later, Qiuyue and Xiao Rong appeared before him. However, their aura and spiritual energy were completely gone, almost as though they didn't even exist.

'What a profound technique...'  
Xie Xingfang thought to herself when she could not sense their presence despite standing right before them.

"Let's go." Su Yang said.

Sometime later, Su Yang returned to Xie Wang's side with Xie Xingfang with him.

"You really brought her here..." Xie Wang looked at him with disbelief.

"Don't worry, grandfather. Although you can't sense them, the seniors are also here with us." Xie Xingfang said to him.

"Oh! That's great!" All of the worries in Xie Wang's chest immediately disappeared after hearing her words.

"Patriarch Gold! Look over there! That beauty beside that young man!" The people on the ship said to him with excitement, as they were bewildered by Xie Xingfang's beauty.

"She's a real fairy! A real fairy, I say!"

"There are not many people who could rival her appearance even in the Holy Central Continent! To think there'd be such a treasure in this place!"

"I can only name two people who might be able to rival her appearances in the entire Holy Central Continent, and they both belong to the other two Ancient Academy!"

"Congratulations, Patriarch Gold!"

Although the people congratulated him, they were all filled with jealousy inside their hearts. After all, Xie Xingfang was truly a beauty who can topple an entire kingdom with just her looks!

"Hahahahaha!" Patriarch Gold could not help but laugh out loud when he saw Xie Xingfang. Even he did not expect someone as beautiful as Xie Xingfang would appear, and he felt as though he'd struck gold.

'This trip was definitely worth it! Even if she is the only woman on this land, it was totally worth it coming here!' Patriarch Gold continued to laugh inwardly before flying towards them.

"I will be lying to you and myself if I said that I am not surprised. To think that you'd turn out to be such a beautiful woman! I truly did not expect such an outcome!" Patriarch Gold said, before raising his hands to make a beckoning gesture.

"Now hand her over to me and I'll leave the Eastern Continent alone."

However, Su Yang casually shook his head and spoke in a calm voice, "Although I said that I would give her to you, I never said it was going to be free."

Patriarch Gold's eyes widened with surprise, and he spoke in a slightly dumbfounded voice, "You want me to pay for her? Are you serious? And to think I thought you were somewhat smart!" Patriarch Gold suddenly frowned, and he continued to speak, "You have ten seconds to hand her over before I go over there myself."

However, Su Yang's expression remained nonchalant, and he spoke, "Did you really think I'd hand her over to you just like that? You are quite foolish for someone at the Sovereign Spirit Realm."

"You little bastard..." The space between Patriarch Gold's eyebrows furrowed deeply, and his gaze became filled with killing intent, as it has been many decades since anyone has dared to mock him in such a manner.

"I should be saying the same thing, you little bastard." Su Yang narrowed his eyes, and his aura suddenly exploded with fierceness.

"How dare you try to touch my — Su Yang's women? Even Immortals would think twice before they approach my women! Courting death would be an understatement, you damn animal who can only think with his lower head!"

"Su Yang..." Xie Xingfang's face flushed with redness after hearing his words, completely misunderstanding Su Yang's words when he mentioned 'his woman', as she thought he was talking about her.

However, she did not correct him for calling her his woman, even feeling joy at this moment.

"Hahahaha! You sure talk big for someone so weak! So what if I want your woman?! Weaklings like you do not deserve a woman of her caliber anyway! Don't worry, I can promise you that I will take good care of her and play with her every day after I kill you!" Patriarch Gold burst out laughing before releasing his Sovereign Spirit Realm cultivation base.

Hearing his words, Su Yang merely smiled and said, "You are not the first person who wants to covet my women and you certainly won't be the last. However, a few things are for certain — you won't succeed, and you will most certainly die in the process!"

## **Chapter 592 The Pinnacle of Sword Techniques**

Both Su Yang and Patriarch Gold stared at each other with their spiritual energy growing stronger and stronger.

"I never thought the day would come where an ant at the Heavenly Spirit Realm would dare to bare his fangs at me..." Patriarch Gold showed a wide smile on his face, and his aura soared, causing a powerful ripple to sweep the place.

Deep within Su Yang's eyes flickered a profound light, and he released the drop of Celestial Qi within his body, causing his aura to expand exponentially until it rivaled even Patriarch Gold's aura.

When Patriarch Gold saw this, his eyes widened with shock.

'Impossible! How can someone at the Heavenly Spirit Realm rival my aura?! He's not even at the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm! He must be using a spiritual treasure to achieve this feat!' He cried inwardly.

"Anyone who dares to try to covet my women... dies!" Su Yang was the first one to make a movement, and he suddenly flew at Patriarch Gold with the Black Scorpion in his grasp.

Patriarch Gold, who usually fights with his bare fists, could feel an ominous feeling from the Black Scorpion, so he brought out two golden gauntlets and wore them before meeting with Su Yang.

Boom!

The Jade Sea slightly slips in half as the two of them clash.

"You are truly full of surprises, brat! Once I kill you, I will take all of your secrets for myself!" Patriarch Gold said as he punched at Su Yang with immense strength.

"Golden Thunder!"

Patriarch Gold's gauntlets cracked with lightning as it rushed at Su Yang.

"Heaven Consuming Strike!"

Su Yang slashed at him with the Black Scorpion that was covered in black flames.

Boom!

Black flames exploded in every direction upon impact, and Patriarch Gold retreated a dozen steps from the exchange.

'What a powerful technique!' Patriarch Gold could feel his hands trembling after the exchange, feeling as though he'd just hit a steel wall with his bare hands.

However, among his feelings of shock Patriarch Gold was also filled with excitement, as he cannot wait to kill Su Yang and learn his secrets.

"Have a taste of the Golden Lion Academy's techniques! Heavenly Transformation!"

Patriarch Gold's body suddenly began growing larger and larger, and even his hair was growing longer.

A few moments later, thick golden fur covered Patriarch Gold's body, and his figure resembled that of a beast, almost like a lion.

"What kind of technique is that?! He's essentially turned into a beast!" Xie Wang watched his transformation with wide eyes.

"ROOOOAR!"

Patriarch Gold roared loudly after his transformation, and his cultivation skyrocketed to a new level.

Seeing this, Su Yang exchanged the Black Scorpion for an ordinary Spirit-grade sword.

"Divine Sword!"

When the sword began glowing a golden color, Su Yang suddenly tossed the sword in the air.

Whoosh!

The sword began expanding many folds — until it was the size of an entire pagoda with ten floors, and it was larger than even the ship that Patriarch Gold traveled the Jade Sea with.

The enormous sword also emitted an otherworldly aura that caused everyone there to feel as though they were before the presence of an almighty existence they cannot comprehend, making them feel incredibly insignificant. Furthermore, their strength was disappearing, almost as though it was being sucked away by a mysterious force.

"What the hell is this?!" Patriarch Gold was shocked when he realized that he could not control his transformation under this otherworldly aura, causing him to return to his original form. However, that was not all, as even his cultivation base was beginning to decline.

"What the fuck did you do to me?!" Patriarch Gold shouted at Su Yang afterward.

"..."

Su Yang gazed at him with an indifferent expression, and he spoke, "The Divine Sword is the pinnacle of sword technique, and it is also the most powerful sword in existence. Even Immortals and Gods bow before its presence. And anything before its presence will be restricted— even one's cultivation base. Although I can only use a tiny portion of its power right now, it's more than enough to deal with an ant like you."

"The most powerful sword in existence...? Don't screw with me and fight me fairly!" Patriarch Gold roared with a fuming face.

"Fight you fairly? That's quite funny coming from someone who's proudly bullying someone at the Heavenly Spirit Realm while being at the Sovereign Spirit Realm." Su Yang's gaze remained indifferent, and he continued, "If you want fairness, then I shall restrict your cultivation base to the Heavenly Spirit Realm level."

The Divine Sword in the sky suddenly trembled, filling the area with its profound aura.

A few moments later, Patriarch Gold could feel his Sovereign Spirit Realm cultivation base declining until it was at the level of someone at the Heavenly Spirit Realm!

"T-This is..." Patriarch Gold stared at his sweaty palms with his entire body trembling from fear. He has never experienced such a crazy fight before, nor has he ever felt this powerless.

"It was never a fight since the beginning." Su Yang's voice suddenly resounded in front of him.

When Patriarch Gold looked up, Su Yang was standing right before him with a cold expression.

"When I am before someone who tried to covet my women, it's inevitable that I become a bully who will trample my enemy until there is nothing left of them."

"..."

Under Su Yang's cold gaze, the usually domineering and almighty Patriarch Gold felt as small as an ant.

"Ahhhhh!"

Patriarch Gold no longer had any desire to fight and immediately turned around to run away.

"Xiao Rong." Su Yang mumbled her name.

And before Patriarch Gold could run very far, a small figure with heavenly beauty appeared before him like a ghost to block his path.

When Patriarch Gold saw Xiao Rong's face, unlike the lust and desire he felt before, his face twisted with shock and fear.

"Y-Y-Y-You are!!!" He immediately recalled what happened at the Golden Lion Academy, and the trauma he'd long forgotten re-emerged.

### **Chapter 593 Have Mercy!**

"W-What are you doing here, you damn monster?!" Patriarch Gold trembled nonstop before Xiao Rong's presence, his complexion white as sheets, almost as though he'd turned into a ghost.

"How can you call a beauty like her a monster? That's quite rude." Su Yang said with a calm smile on his face.

"Y-Y-You! What's your relationship with her?! Why is she here?! Just who are you, really?!" Patriarch Gold looked at him with a terrified expression.

However, instead of Su Yang's voice, another voice responded to his question.

"You have really screwed yourself over this time, you perverted animal," Qiuyue spoke as she approached them from a distance.

"Y-Y-You are! Immortal Fairy Su Yue?!" Patriarch Gold exclaimed.

"S-Shut up! Don't you dare mention that name again!" Qiuyue suddenly appeared before Patriarch Gold with a flushed face and slapped him so hard that he was sent flying many miles away.

"Aiya! Are you trying to kill him before I can?" Su Yang shook his head at her.

"I-I held back!" she quickly said.

"It sure didn't look like it! In fact, it looked like you struck him with your full strength!" Su Yang said.

He then looked at Xiao Rong and said to her, "Can you bring him back here?"

Xiao Rong nodded and went to grab Patriarch Gold before returning with an unconscious body a few seconds later.

"Look, you really did kill him!" Su Yang said when he saw the unconscious Patriarch Gold.

"Nonsense!" Qiuyue approached Patriarch Gold and gave him a few more slaps.

"Wake up! I know you're not dead!"

"Huh?! What happened to me?! Where am I?!" Patriarch Gold woke up a moment later completely confused by his situation, almost as though he'd lost his memories.



However, when he saw Qiuyue and Xiao Rong, he quickly recalled his situation and said, "What are you going to do to me?! I am the Golden Lion Academy's Sect Leader! You can't kill me!"

"I can't kill you? Have you gone retarded after that slap just now?" Su Yang coldly snorted, and he said, "Since you tried to covet my women, I will kill you even if you are the Heavenly Emperor's son!"

"P-Please! I was wrong! I shouldn't have even thought about trying to touch your women! Spare me, exalted one!" Patriarch Gold began begging for his life.

"This is all because of my cultivation technique that increases my sexual urges significantly, almost like a beast, and most of the time I cannot even control it!"

However, Su Yang remained nonchalant after hearing such words, and he said, "Blaming your cultivation technique for your own misdeeds... are you really a Cultivator? Whose fault is it that you cannot control the technique? Did your cultivation technique also force you to come all the way to the Eastern Continent to bully the weak? It's nobody but your own fault for being incompetent."

After saying those words, Su Yang slowly raised his hand towards the heavens.

"P-P-Please! Have mercy! Have mercy!" Patriarch Gold pleaded with tears in his eyes.

But alas, Su Yang's gaze remained cold, and he said, "What would you do if you were in my shoes? Would you let me live? What about the women you have assaulted before? Did you stop when they begged for mercy? I don't think so."

Su Yang casually waved his hand downwards, causing the massive sword in the sky to tremble. A moment later, the massive sword began shrinking until it was the size of a normal sword again, but its divine aura remained, even growing stronger than before.

"Divine Sword."

The sword suddenly emitted a bright light, before it shot itself towards Patriarch Gold.

"N-N-No! No! No!"

Patriarch Gold immediately turned around to run away, but the sword had arrived in front of him before he could even move.

"Ahhhhh!"

The sword pierced Patriarch Gold directly in the middle of his chest, before pushing his body towards the Jade Sea.

Boom!

The Jade Sea was pushed aside by the Divine Sword's divine aura, and Patriarch Gold was sent plunging into the deepest part of the Jade Sea.

A few moments later, Patriarch Gold reached the bottom of the Jade Sea, and he was pinned onto the ground by the sword, feeling powerless to remove it.

However, for some odd reason, despite being at the bottom of the Jade Sea, Patriarch Gold was still able to breathe normally, albeit a bit painful.

"Don't worry, I won't let you die so easily. The Divine Sword has the ability to keep you alive with the surrounding spiritual energy, and it will chase away any sea creatures that might want to eat you with its aura. I will have you repent your mistakes for the rest of your life underwater while being surrounded by ugly sea creatures." Su Yang's voice resounded in Patriarch Gold's head.

"AHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!!!" Patriarch Gold screamed at the top of his lungs, but alas, nobody was to hear it.

After sealing Patriarch Gold away at the bottom of the Jade Sea, Su Yang turned to look at the ship and the people Patriarch Gold brought along with him.

And when the people on the ship noticed Su Yang looking at them, all of the Heavenly Spirit Realm experts immediately flew in the opposite direction.

However, before they can get very far, the sea creatures that had been silent this entire time began attacking them.

"Ahhhhh!"

And without Patriarch Gold to protect them, even the Cultivators at the Heavenly Spirit Realm could only last for a few seconds against these powerful sea creatures before being devoured by them.

As for those people that could not fly and could only remain on the ship, Su Yang used a sword to cut the entire ship in half, sinking the entire thing and everyone in it, allowing the sea creatures to deal with them.

After dealing with the Golden Lion Academy, Su Yang returned to Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang's side.

"..."

Of course, both Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang had been completely speechless throughout the entire event, feeling as though they'd just witnessed something they were not supposed to.

### **Chapter 594 Cultivators From a Higher Realm**

"The invaders have been taken care of and the Moonlight Blades' Leader is in your custody. I believe you are safe now, Xing'er." Su Yang said to Xie Xingfang after they returned to the flying ship.

"I...I really don't know how to thank you for all of this, Su Yang..." Xie Xingfang sighed.

"Are you still thinking about that? I have said this many times already but you really don't need to repay me, since I am only doing as I please." He shook his head.

"Anyway, what are you going to do with them?" He then pointed to the Moonlight Blades that were still trapped within his formation.

"I'm going to bring them back to the Xie Family and have my son deal with them. If it were up to me, I would slaughter them right here, but that would be too lenient for these bastards." Xie Wang said.

Su Yang nodded and said, "I'll seal their cultivation bases to make things easier for you."

He then approached the Moonlight Blades and used his sealing technique on all of them, sealing their cultivation bases.

Once that was done, he tossed them on the flying ship and said to Qiuyue. "Let's bring them to Snowfall City before we return to the Profound Blossom Sect."

Qiuyue nodded, and a few minutes later, they arrived at Snowfall City.

When Lord Xie and everybody in the city saw the massive flying ship above them, they were at a loss for words, feeling as though they were being invaded by Immortals or something like that.

But when he noticed Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang on the flying ship, Lord Xie immediately sighed in relief.

After dropping off Xie Xingfang and Xie Wang along with the Moonlight Blades, Su Yang returned to the Profound Blossom Sect with Qiuyue and Xiao Rong.

"Father, we have caught the Leader of the Moonlight Blades." Xie Xingfang said to Lord Xie after returning home.

"What?! Moonlight Blades' Leader?! Let me see this bastard!"

Sometime later, Lord Xie was brought to where Leader Lai and his henchmen were tied up.

"You are... General Lai? You were alive this entire time?!" Lord Xie was shocked to see his old general.

"Xie Yimu..." Leader Lai glared at him with narrowed eyes filled with killing intent.

"The Moonlight Blades... is this your method of revenge?" Lord Xie quickly understood the situation and sighed.

"Shut up! This is all your fault, Xie Yimu! Now that you have captured me, you can kill me already!" Leader Lai shouted.

However, Lord Xie merely shook his head and said, "I won't kill you that easily. And because you ran away before we can punish you for treason, we will add that to your crimes and punish you accordingly."

"Guards! Bring them to the Dark Chamber!"

A few minutes later, once the Moonlight Blades were led away by the guards, Lord Xie asked Xie Wang, "Where did you guys find them?"

"We weren't the ones who found them." Xie Wang shook his head and said, "It was Su Yang who did most of the work."

"Hm? Su Yang? What did he do this time?" Lord Xie raised his eyebrows with interest.

"You are not going to believe what happened..." Xie Wang sighed, and he said, "It's going to be a long story so let's sit down first."

A few minutes later, once they were relaxed, Xie Wang began recalling their experience in the last few days.

He told Lord Xie about the invaders from the Holy Central Continent, Su Yang's real strength, how he handled this entire situation single-handedly, the existence of Qiuyue and Xiao Rong, and the Grand Formation at the Profound Blossom Sect.

By the end, Lord Xie held a dazed expression on his face, looking completely baffled.

"Su Yang... just who is he?! How can a mere Junior have such achievements?! This is simply unbelievable!"

"I have a theory on his real identity, but it may sound a bit far fetched." Xie Wang said with a serious expression.

"Su Yang... he's the reincarnation of a very powerful Cultivator."

"..."

Lord Xie looked at him with wide eyes, seemingly speechless.

"Do you really believe that reincarnation is real?"

"There's no solid evidence that suggests it's real, but if you think about it, we Cultivators cultivate in hopes of attaining immortality. However, we have never seen true immortality before. But despite that, we continue to cultivate and chase after it. Furthermore, it explains why Su Yang has so much otherworldly knowledge that we cannot even begin to understand."

"Su Yang's supposed to be a Dual Cultivator, but he's also a swordmaster with unimaginable mastery over the sword. How do you think he achieved such a feat in 17 short years? Even the Son of Heaven would not have such talents."

"What about the Holy Central Continent? What if they are involved?" Lord Xie asked, still doubting such a theory.

"I have already thought about that, but that seems improbable. The invader from the Holy Central Continent was a top expert from the Holy Central Continent, but even he was powerless against Su Yang." Xie Wang shook his head.

"Though, there is another theory..."

Xie Wang took a deep breath and said, "Those two goddesses by Su Yang's side... they do not belong in this world."

"You don't mean..." Lord Xie's eyes widened with shock.

"They are Cultivators from a 'Higher Realm'." Xie Wang spoke with a serious expression, and he continued, "Just like Immortality and Reincarnation, legends of a 'Higher Realm' that exist in a place where we cannot see or reach through normal means exist. This would explain Su Yang's existence and why he has so much otherworldly knowledge."

"Cultivators from a Higher Realm..." Lord Xie mumbled with a pondering face.

"Do you think Su Yang would tell us about it if we asked him?" Lord Xie asked Xie Wang.

"We can try."

Lord Xie nodded and said, "Then I will ask him when he comes here to receive their rewards from the Regional Tournament in a few weeks."

### **Chapter 595 Missing Corpse**

Back at the Profound Blossom Sect after returning to the Yin Yang Pavilion, Su Yang was approached by Liu Lanzhi, who said to him, "You have a visitor in your room."

"A visitor? Oh, I can guess who it is." Su Yang nodded after pondering for a few seconds.

"By the way, the Xie Family has returned to their own home." Su Yang then said to her.

"Really?! Thank Heavens!" Liu Lanzhi sighed in relief after hearing his words, and she continued, "I have been lacking sleep from nervousness ever since they arrived. I would've been fine if it was only Xie Xingfang who came to visit, but to think the Ancestor would also appear here; it was truly nerve-racking."

"Is that old man that renowned?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

Liu Lanzhi quickly nodded and said, "Of course! Before Lord Xie became the ruler, the Ancestor ruled the Eastern Continent with an iron fist! Things were much different back then, and there are countless heroic stories of him."

"Is that so? He sure didn't behave like the person you'd just described." Su Yang smiled.

"I guess times have changed, and rumors have it that it was Xie Xingfang who changed him."

"Anyway, now that they are gone, I am going to get some sleep. Ah, and before I forget, I will need another 'filling' soon." Liu Lanzhi said to him while pointing at her stomach with an enchanting expression.

Su Yang nodded with a smile and said, "I will fill you up later."

After Liu Lanzhi returned to her own room, Su Yang also did the same.

"Hm? You're finally back. Where did you go for the last few days?" Tang Lingxi greeted him while laying on his bed with a relaxed look on her face.

"I had some business with the Xie Family." Su Yang said as he approached Tang Lingxi, before casually laying on the bed right beside her.

Tang Lingxi smiled at his actions and gently embraced him.

"You look pretty exhausted. Did you use your Celestial Qi again?" she asked him.

"Yeah. I had to fight someone at the Sovereign Spirit Realm."

"Oh? There is someone else besides the Xie Family's Ancestor who is at the Sovereign Spirit Realm? Tell me more about it."

"Yes, but he did not belong to the Eastern Continent. He came from the Holy Central Continent."

"The Holy Central Continent? Why would he come all the way over here?"

Su Yang proceeded to explain the entire situation to her from the beginning to the end.

"Hmmm... it feels like I have heard this kind of story before— and more than once." Tang Lingxi said.

"Probably because there's no shortage of men who cannot keep their hands to themselves or their own things." Su Yang sighed. "I wonder how many people I will have to kill once I return to the Divine Heavens."

"If you ever get bored, just let me know. I love killing people, especially vulgar men." Tang Lingxi said with a smile.

"I am pretty perverted myself, you know?" Su Yang chuckled.

"You are probably the most perverted man I know, but I don't dislike it. In fact, besides my own family, you are the only man I can tolerate being so close to me without feeling the urge to kill you." Tang Lingxi said as she tightened her embrace on him.

"Oh, how much I want to consume you right now..." Tang Lingxi mumbled in a low voice right beside his ears.

"Shouldn't it be the other way around?"

"That would be true if you were in your old body, but with your current body, you won't even last an hour with the real me." Tang Lingxi said.

"Hahaha... I guess that's true."

A moment later, Su Yang said in a pondering voice, "Speaking of my old body, it makes me wonder what happened to it..."

"Do you know what happened to my corpse?"

"Well..." Tang Lingxi showed a hesitant expression before saying, "I originally wanted to take your corpse to bury it within my Asura God Clan's territory, but someone else appeared towards the end of your funeral and stole your corpse."

"W-Wait a moment... someone... stole my corpse?" Su Yang looked at her with wide eyes. Why on earth would someone take his corpse?

Tang Lingxi nodded and said, "We still don't know who did it, but whoever stole your corpse was extremely powerful — so powerful that nobody at the funeral could stop him, and the Heavenly Emperor was present at the funeral."

"Even the Heavenly Emperor could not stop him? Very few people in the world can deal with the Heavenly Emperor," Su Yang said with a frown.

"It was simply too sudden, and most of the people were too busy grieving to notice the robber before it was too late."

"Haaa... I just hope that whoever stole my corpse won't do anything weird to it. It'd be problematic if they use it for something weird." Su Yang sighed.

"Does it really matter what they do with your corpse? I mean, you are alive with another body right now." Tang Lingxi said to him.

"It may not matter much if they don't do anything to it, but what if they reanimate my body with forbidden techniques? Don't you remember what happened 50,000 years ago, when someone reanimated the corpse of a very powerful ancient Cultivator and caused massive mayhem with it? That'd be very problematic if it also happened with my body."

Tang Lingxi chuckled at his words and said, "Why would anyone use your corpse for that? There are countless other more powerful Cultivators that have died before you that would benefit them more than a Dual Cultivator!"

"If anyone were to reanimate your body, I'm sure it'd be some crazy woman with that kind of fetish!" Tang Lingxi laughed out loud.

"Well? Do you know any women that might be crazy enough to pull that kind of stunt?" she asked him sometime later.

"..."

Su Yang was speechless, but not because of Tang Lingxi's words. He was speechless because he could easily name over a dozen women who would be crazy enough to use his corpse for that kind of purpose!

"I am now having second thoughts about returning to the Divine Heavens. If those crazy women learn of my situation, who knows what they might do to me! The current me is also too weak to defend myself against them!" Su Yang trembled in fear.

However, instead of comforting him, Tang Lingxi merely continued to laugh at him. "Don't worry, darling. If anyone dares to try anything funny to you, I deal with them for you."

### **Chapter 596 Take It in the Butt?!**

"Anyway, I plan on staying here with you for the remainder of my time in this world until I give this body back to Hong Yu'er." Tang Lingxi said to him sometime later.

"Whatever makes you happy..." Su Yang said before falling asleep from exhaustion.

"Have a good rest..." Tang Lingxi proceeded to stare at Su Yang's peaceful sleeping face until he woke up a few hours later.

After Su Yang woke up, he said to her, "I have to cultivate with the disciples. I will be back in a few hours."

Tang Lingxi nodded and said, "Take your time. I have some business with Qiuyue, anyway."

"Qiuyue?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows in a surprised manner.

"You don't want to ask me why?" she asked him a moment later.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Will you tell me if I ask?"

"Nope!" she quickly said.

"Then I will see you later." Su Yang said before disappearing from the place to cultivate with the disciples.

Tang Lingxi proceeded to approach Qiuyue's room afterward.

"S-Senior sister Lingxi! What are you doing here?" Qiuyue was surprised to see her in the Profound Blossom Sect.

"I have to return to my body in a few months, so I want to spend my remaining time here with Su Yang." Tang Lingxi said.

"Can I come inside?" she asked a moment later.

"Please!" Qiuyue opened the door widely for her.

"Anyway, I came here to see how you are doing with Su Yang. Any progression between the two of you?" Tang Lingxi asked her after entering her room.

"M-Me and Su Yang?!" Qiuyue looked at her with wide eyes.

"Yes. I have promised you that I would give you advice from time to time, right? Well, I am here to give you advice, and judging from your reaction just now, something happened between the two of you recently. Care to tell this Elder Sister about it?"

"..."

Qiuyue was speechless, as she didn't really expect getting relationship advice from the princess of the Asura God Clan. It was so unbelievable that if she'd told anyone about it, they would think that she was crazy.

"Haaa... since Senior sister Lingxi wants to know, I will tell you..." Qiuyue sighed in a defeated voice.

"Well, it started like this... A few days ago Su Yang came to my room... and I requested a massage... then one thing led to another..." Qiuyue proceeded to recall her experience with him to Tang Lingxi.

Tang Lingxi showed a surprised expression by the end, and she spoke in a praising voice, "To tell you the truth, I did not expect such massive progress in such a short time! To think you got fingerfucked by Su Yang!"

"F-Finger—?!" Qiuyue's face flushed with redness after hearing such a vulgar word coming out of Tang Lingxi's mouth, and she'd even said it with such a casual tone.

"At this rate, it won't be long before you have sex with him!" Tang Lingxi continued to speak.

"Eh?" However, Qiuyue looked at her with a puzzled expression.

"What do you mean by 'it won't be long'? I cannot do that with him because of the curse..."



"Hm? I know that you can't. But I am talking about something else." Tang Lingxi said, and she continued, "Perhaps... you do not know about it?"

"Know about what, Senior sister? Stop being so vague and tell me already..." Qiuyue spoke with her heart filled with nervousness and anticipation.

"Although the people from the Sacred Moon Palace cannot have normal sex with outsiders because of the curse in their blood, as long as the penetration is not in your vagina, you can still have sex with Su Yang. In other words, you can take it in the butt without activating the curse. It's a loophole that even the Moon God cannot prevent." Tang Lingxi explained to her.

"T-Take it in the butt?!?!" Qiuyue's eyes widened like saucers and her jaw dropped to the floor from shock. She hasn't even had the chance to experience normal sex yet! How could she possibly do something like that?!

"It may sound scary at first, but I can guarantee you that it's not bad at all!" Tang Lingxi spoke with a confident expression, almost as though she was plenty experienced in that matter.

"D-Does this mean Senior sister Lingxi also..." Qiuyue looked at her with wide eyes.

"Of course." Tang Lingxi nodded without hesitation. "When you spend enough time with someone, you are bound to want to try something new. And that's exactly what I did with Su Yang."

"I don't know if I can do it..." Qiuyue sighed, and she continued, "After all, I don't even have any normal experiences..."

"Who cares about that? Whether you take it in the front or in the back first doesn't matter at all, as you are still embracing the person you love. Don't you want to do that kind of stuff with Su Yang? I thought your kind of people enjoys doing that kind of stuff." Tang Lingxi said to her.

"What? Who said that?! I don't have any urges of that kind!" Qiuyue quickly denied her claims.

However, Tang Lingxi was not convinced and said, "I guess you still haven't 'awakened' yet because you are still pure. However, once you reach a certain age or lose your virginity, you'll eventually start craving for that kind of desire."

"What do you mean by 'awakened'?" Qiuyue looked at her with a dumbfounded look. How does an outsider know more than her about her own race?

"Did your parents really not teach you anything about your own bloodline? You are the Moon God's daughter, too! It's simply unbelievable how you know so little about your own background." Tang Lingxi shook her head.

"..."

Qiuyue remained silent, as she had no excuses to make regarding her own ignorance.

"Haaa... Whatever. I'll tell you everything I know about the Sacred Moon Palace and your people. Though, if you want to know more, you should speak with Su Yang, as he'd personally lived there before." Tang Lingxi sighed.

Qiuyue nodded, and she wore a serious expression on her face as she waited for Tang Lingxi to speak.

### **Chapter 597 Renowned Courtesan**

"Before I tell you what I know about the Sacred Moon Palace and its people, I should let you know in advance that my knowledge was given to me by someone who used to be from the Sacred Moon Palace and I don't know if it's reliable." Tang Lingxi said to Qiuyue.

"Used to?" Qiuyue asked.

"I say 'used to' because just like you, she did not like the Sacred Moon Palace and its traditions, so she ran away from home and became a rogue Cultivator. Although it doesn't happen often, there are people who refuse to accept the Moon God's lunacy and choose to run away from home."

"This is the first time I've heard about this..." Qiuyue expressed surprise, as she believed that everybody from the Sacred Moon Palace was on the Moon God's side and that she was the only one who dared to run away from that place.

"I'm not surprised that they would suppress such information since it might give other people the same idea. And if I recall correctly, over a dozen people have escaped from the Moon God's incestuous paradise in the last ten thousand years."

"Anyway, back to what that deserter told me about the Sacred Moon Palace, apparently your people have these extreme sexual urges during certain days of the year where you'll crave for passion like animals. However, it only happens if you lose your virginity or after you remain a virgin for a very long time." Tang Lingxi said to her.

"How old are you right now?" she then asked Qiuyue.

"A little over 3,000 years old..." she replied in a low voice.

"Hmmm... that person said that it usually happens to those who remain a virgin even after turning 10,000 years old, but that time can shorten drastically depending on how pure your bloodline is. And since you are the Moon God's direct descendant, we can assume that your bloodline is very pure."

"If I have to take a guess, it could happen to you a few thousand years from now, or even a few hundred years from now. Hell, it might even happen to you in a few years."

"..."

Qiuyue began sweating profusely after hearing her words.

"Did that person say anything about suppressing these urges? Are there any methods to cope with it?" she asked.

"Well, you can either have sex until your urges are subdued or try to resist your urges. And while I don't know exactly how bad those urges are, that person said that it was strong enough to make one go crazy if they don't satisfy those urges immediately, and it would only worsen as time goes on."

"Those urges can also last anywhere between a week to an entire month depending on the purity of your bloodline, so I imagine it would last longer for someone like you."

"This is unbelievable! Just why do I have to suffer so much because of my bloodline?! Is it not enough that I cannot fully embrace the man I love? Now I have to deal with these urges!" Qiuyue's expression was filled with sorrow at this moment, even self-hatred, thinking that it might've been better if she was never born.

"Calm down, junior sister. It might not be as hopeless as you think." Tang Lingxi suddenly said.

"What do you mean?"

"Well, that person I told you about — she has managed to create a technique that could suppress those sexual urges to a level where it can be resisted with sheer willpower."

"Really?!" Qiuyue's eyes immediately lit up with hope and interest.

"Un." Tang Lingxi nodded, and she continued, "If you are really interested in that technique, you can ask her for more information when you return to the Divine Heavens. I'll even let her know about you."

"Thank you, elder sister!" Qiuyue quickly said to her.

"Don't even mention it. It's only normal for family members to help each other out when needed." Tang Lingxi said with a smile.

"Anyway, now that this topic is over, let's move onto the second one — the loophole for the curse." Tang Lingxi then spoke with a serious expression on her face.

"According to another person that had escaped from the Sacred Moon Palace, you are safe to have sex with someone that's not of your bloodline as long as you do it with your butt."

"H-How reliable is this person?" Qiuyue asked her with a weird expression on her face.

"Very." Tang Lingxi said.

"You might not believe me when I say this, but this individual... she's actually a very well known courtesan within the Divine Heavens with many years of experience in the field."

"A courtesan?!" Qiuyue's eyes widened with shock, as she cannot imagine someone with her bloodline working as a courtesan.

"If someone with the same bloodline as you can work as a courtesan without any problems and even become famous from it, I think we can say with confidence that you can take it in the butt without activating the curse. Of course, the real question is whether you are willing to do such a thing."

"..."

Qiuyue was speechless. Not even in her wildest imaginations would she have to make such a decision — whether she should take it in the butt or not.

"I...I don't know..." she mumbled with a flushed face a moment later.

"Don't worry about rushing to a decision. You have plenty of time to think. With that being said, you shouldn't delay it too much. Because like I'd said last time, you are extremely lucky to have so much time with Su Yang right now, and once you return to the Divine Heavens, you'll regret not spending

more time with him. Even though I am a direct descendent from the Asura God Clan, one of the top powers in the Divine Heavens, compared to a few individuals within the Su Family, I might as well be an ordinary little girl."

"What?!" Qiuyue glared at Tang Lingxi with a baffled expression. "There are people with even more status than you in the family?!"

Tang Lingxi nodded with a bitter smile and said, "I don't want to spoil the fun for you so I won't mention them any more than I already did, but you'll understand what I mean once you see them."

### **Chapter 598 Sect Master's Routine**

"Anyway, I have given you enough advice for now. Do you have any questions for me before I go back to Su Yang's room?" Tang Lingxi asked Qiuyue.

"Eh? Su Yang's room?" Qiuyue looked at her with questioning eyes.

"I will be staying in his room until I leave. But you don't have to worry, since I cannot do anything with this body even if my soul is craving for his embrace, and I can only wait until he returns to the Divine Heaven. I have my own hardships, you know?"

"Umm... before you leave, can you tell me more about... your experience... with that...?" Qiuyue asked her in a bashful tone.

A wide smile appeared on Tang Lingxi's face, and she spoke, "Very well. I will tell you everything you want to know about taking it in the butt!"

"I didn't mean..." Qiuyue looked at her with a gobsmacked expression.

"Don't be shy. This senior sister will teach you everything."

Thus, Tang Lingxi began giving Qiuyue lectures on her experience with Su Yang in anal sex.

Meanwhile, inside a female disciples' room, Su Yang just finished ejecting his Yang Qi into the disciple's body.

"Thank you for taking the time to cultivate with me, Sect Master." The disciple said to him afterward while rubbing her stomach that was filled with his hot Yang Qi.

"How can I not come when a beautiful woman such as yourself wants to cultivate? If you could endure it, I would cultivate with you all day." Su Yang said with a smile.

"You are teasing me again, Sect Master. I am only a disciple. I wouldn't dare to keep you for myself for so long even if I could."

"You may be a disciple, but in my eyes, you are a woman before anything else — a beautiful one at that."

"Sect Master..." The disciple's face flushed with redness, and she spoke a moment later, "Then can I ask for another round of cultivation? I am no longer exhausted for some reason."

"With pleasure." Su Yang nodded his head before sticking his other head into the disciple's lower lips, entering her tight and wet cave that immediately gushed with Yin Qi.

"Ah~"

The disciple moaned softly, and the two of them began another round of cultivation.

After exhausting the disciple until she could no longer even sit up, Su Yang left the disciple's house and proceeded to meet another disciple.

"Sect Master, thank you for coming here today." The disciple greeted Su Yang at the door with her body already fully naked, and she said, "I was just practicing with the doll you gave us..."

"Oh? Since you already have it out, why don't you let me see your progress?" Su Yang said to her.

The disciple nodded with a bashful smile, and she led him into her room, where the practice doll was laying on her bed with the shaft between its legs dripping with the disciple's Yin Qi.

"I have been practicing every day with the practice doll ever since I received it from you, Sect Master." The disciple said as she climbed on the practice doll.

A few seconds later, she sat directly on the practice doll's shaft with her front hole, and she began riding it fiercely.

"Ahh~!"

"Ahhhh~"

"Ah~!"

The disciple moaned in pleasure as she demonstrated her techniques before Su Yang, who stood there and watched with a calm expression.

A few minutes later, the disciple's body trembled, and her lower hole gushed with Yin Qi.

"Haa... haaa... haa... What do you think, Sect Master? Did I improve?" she asked him while panting heavily.

Su Yang nodded and said, "I see that you've fixed your posture exactly as I'd advised. However, you are still stiff with some of the movements. Let me show you."

Su Yang then removed his clothes, pushed the practice doll to the side, and laid on the bed.

"Do it one more time from the beginning, but allow my hands to guide your body while you do it." Su Yang said to her.

The disciple nodded, and after taking a deep breath, she began riding Su Yang's shaft the same way she did with the practice doll.

Meanwhile, Su Yang had his hands on her hips, and he would manipulate her movements with his spiritual energy when her movements started becoming stiff.

"Ahhhh~!"

"Ahhhhh!"

The disciple moaned louder than she did with the practice doll, her body trembled more violently, and Yin Qi was gushing from her pink cave constantly.

A few minutes later, the disciple collapsed onto Su Yang with her large breasts pressing directly against his chest.

"What do you think?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"It was... amazing... Sect Master..." The disciple spoke in an exhausted voice.

"Not that, you silly girl. I am talking about your movements. Were you even paying attention at all?"

"I'm sorry, Sect Master... I was too indulged in the cultivation to focus..." The disciple said in an apologetic voice.

"It's fine. I will do it again, so pay attention this time."

The disciple nodded, and after resting for a few minutes, she began moving her hips again.

"I think I understand it this time, Sect Master." The disciple said to him after the second round.

"Then we'll do it again until you are confident you understand it." Su Yang said.

"Yes, Sect Master!" The disciple responded with enthusiasm.

After cultivating with this disciple for half an hour, Su Yang left her house and proceeded to the next disciple's house, and he would continue with this routine until he visited every female disciple that requested to cultivate with him.

By the time he finished satisfying and lecturing all of the disciples, it was already well into the night. However, he did not immediately return to his own room, as he still had one more individual who was waiting for him.

"Are you awake?" Su Yang knocked on Liu Lanzhi's door.

"I am awake. You can come inside." Liu Lanzhi responded a few seconds later.

When Su Yang opened the door, Liu Lanzhi was already on her bed and wearing very revealing and seductive nightwear.

"I have been waiting for you, Su Yang," she said to him with an alluring smile.

### **Chapter 599 Urges to Just Go Wild**

"Ahhh~"

"Ahhhhh~!"

"Ahhh~!"

"More! Fill my body with more of your Yang Qi!"

Liu Lanzhi moaned loudly as Su Yang passionately pounded her body.

A few moments later, hot Yang Qi rushed into her tight cave, filling her stomach until she felt full, feeling as though she just ate a large meal.

"Let me clean it up for you," Liu Lanzhi said to him afterward.

"Mmm..." She gently licked around his thick shaft with her soft tongue before sticking it inside her mouth.

"Mmm~"

"Mmmmm..."

Liu Lanzhi continued to suck on his rod despite already licking it clean, looking as though she was addicted to it.

"You should have more inside you, right? Go ahead and shoot it inside my mouth. I'll swallow everything you have to offer!" Liu Lanzhi suddenly said to him.

Su Yang nodded with a slight smile on his face, and a few minutes later, another load of Yang Qi rushed out of his shaft, quickly filling Liu Lanzhi's mouth.

"Mmmm!"

Liu Lanzhi's eyes widened with surprise by the seemingly endless supply of Yang Qi flowing into her mouth, and she hastily swallowed the Yang Qi so that she could fit more in her mouth.

Many mouthfuls later, Su Yang stopped releasing his Yang Qi, allowing Liu Lanzhi to finally breathe.

"Were you trying to choke me to death with your Yang Qi?" Liu Lanzhi said to him afterward.

"I couldn't help it, your mouth just felt that amazing." Su Yang shrugged with an innocent-looking expression.

"Really?" Liu Lanzhi asked him with her eyes flickering with joy.

"Yes, really. Compared to our first session together, you have improved significantly. Even you wouldn't recognize yourself if you could travel to the past and witness the difference." He nodded.

"I guess having a competent partner makes a world of difference," she said, and then she continued with a bittersweet smile. "I don't know how I'll get by without you in the future, Su Yang. After doing it so many times with you, my standards for pleasure have become somewhat unrealistic, and I won't be satisfied with just anybody now. How are you going to take responsibility for this, Su Yang?"

"When you've become so good at something that it's easier to improve than to hold back your abilities, there's really nothing you can really do." Su Yang sighed. "It may not seem like it, but it's actually incredibly difficult for me to hold back so much of my abilities. There were plenty of times during my cultivation in this world that I felt this uncontrollable urge to just go wild."

Liu Lanzhi looked at Su Yang with wide eyes, as she cannot imagine just how much of his real abilities are actually being suppressed or what it would feel like to cultivate with Su Yang when he's using all of his abilities and techniques.

"I'm sorry, Su Yang. I knew you were holding back your abilities, but I didn't know it would be this extent." Liu Lanzhi sighed.

"Don't worry about it, I'm used to it by now." Su Yang said with a smile.

Sometime later, Liu Lanzhi asked him, "How are the disciples doing?"

"They are all improving at a very good pace. It shouldn't take long before they are all at the Earth Spirit Realm. Some of them might even reach that level by the end of the year." Su Yang said to her.

"Earth Spirit Realm..." A weird expression appeared on Liu Lanzhi's face. "Not long ago, I would've been ecstatic if even a single disciple managed to enter the True Spirit Realm. It just feels like the world is spinning too fast."

"The Cultivation world is ever-improving, and it will remain that way even if I was not here. I am merely assisting by speeding up that process."

"I feel kind of guilty for letting you do everything by yourself, Su Yang. Even though I am also a Sect Master, I have been doing nothing else besides selfishly improving my own cultivation base while letting you take care of the disciples." Liu Lanzhi sighed.

"If you don't quickly improve your cultivation, what do you think will happen once I am gone? Who will take care of the disciples? Although there's still the Grand Formation protecting the Sect, there's only so much it can do. And once I leave this place, you'll have to take care of the disciples by yourself until you find another Sect Master."

"I don't think I'll be able to find another Sect Master who can fit those shoes as perfectly as you, Su Yang."

"Have faith in the disciples. Although they may be immature right now, once they finish their training, there will be plenty of competent disciples that can become a capable Sect Master."

"Of course. They are taught by an Immortal, after all." Liu Lanzhi said with a smile.

Sometime later, Su Yang returned to his own room, where Tang Lingxi was silently cultivating on his bed.

"As expected of the Sect Master of an entire Sect — you work very hard for the disciples." Tang Lingxi suddenly said to him.

"You're still awake? Were you waiting for me?" Su Yang asked her.

"Yes, I have something to talk to you about; it's regarding Qiuyue," she said with a calm voice.

"Qiuyue? What about her?"

"How do you really feel about her? As a woman, I mean."

"I love her, of course." He responded without hesitation.

"I figured you would say that." Tang Lingxi nodded, and she continued to question him, "Then how much do you know about her bloodline? You stayed in the Sacred Moon Palace for some time, right? Surely, you must know a few things about them."



"The Sacred Moon Palace? Why do you ask?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

"I'm just wondering why you didn't tell Qiuyue about the loophole for the curse. I don't doubt your feelings for her, but knowing you, you would've told her about it long ago so that she won't feel as hopeless. Even if she did not like that idea, at least you've given her a choice." Tang Lingxi said to him.

"..."

Su Yang did not immediately respond and remained silent for a long moment.

### **Chapter 600 Learning About the Loophole**

After a moment of silence, Su Yang spoke with a serious expression, "Loophole...? What are you talking about?"

"Eh?" Tang Lingxi looked at him with wide eyes, seemingly surprised by his reaction.

"You don't know what I'm talking about?" she asked him.

He shook his head and said, "Although I may have lived at the Sacred Moon Palace for a while, my movements in that place were extremely restricted. It was to the point where I couldn't even leave the main house without the Moon God's permission."

"The only reason I was even allowed in that place was because of a technique I had that could improve one's bloodline, which caught the Moon God's attention. Besides Yuehai and Qiuyue, I barely met any other people from that place. As for whatever secrets they had, I only knew what Yuehai was willing to tell me."

"Unbelievable..." Tang Lingxi mumbled in a dazed voice, and she continued a moment later, "Then do you know about their 'awakened' state?"

"You mean when they have these uncontrollable sexual urges? I know about that since Yuehai had a few of those while I was there, and I'd even personally experienced her aggressiveness during such times." Su Yang said, and he continued to speak, "Though, she would normally resist those urges, and the only reason she went wild was because of my presence there, which made it unbearable even for her."

"What? Yuehai managed to control the urges?" Tang Lingxi was surprised to hear that. "How did she do it? What kind of trick did she use?"

"There was no trick behind it — she endured it with her own will. Yuehai, she was a strong woman with a solid mental fortitude." Su Yang sighed.

"Anyway, what's this loophole you mentioned? There's a loophole for her curse? How would you know about something like that?" He then asked her.

"The loophole allows Qiuyue or anyone from the Sacred Moon Palace to have sex with outsiders," she replied.

"What?! Such a thing exists?!" Su Yang was truly shocked this time.

Tang Lingxi nodded and continued to explain to him, "The curse won't activate as long as you don't penetrate her vagina. In other words, as long as you only penetrate her buttohole, you can have sex with her."

Su Yang stared at her with his jaw touching the floor. He did not expect the loophole for the curse to be something as simple as anal sex!

"How on earth did you learn about this?" He asked her a moment later.

"You probably don't know about her since she appeared after your death, but there's this renowned courtesan who's from the Sacred Moon Palace."

"What? Someone from the Sacred Moon Palace working as a courtesan? There's no way the Moon God would allow something like that!" Su Yang said with a surprised face.

"Of course, not. The Moon God has tried to intervene many times, but with her backing from working as a courtesan protecting her, even the Moon God has his hands shackled. Anyway, I spoke with her once, and she told me about the loophole."

"..."

Su Yang was speechless for a long time after learning of this new information.

'I can embrace Qiuyue without needing to deal with the Moon God?' he thought to himself.

A few moments later, he asked her, "Does Qiuyue know about this loophole?"

"Yes, I told her today."

"I see..."

"Would you rather she not know about it?" Seeing his expression, Tang Lingxi asked him with raised eyebrows.

"No, that's not it. If you didn't tell her, I would've told her myself now that I am aware of it. However, Qiuyue... unlike her mother, she's a very delicate existence. I don't want her to feel pressured and rush a decision now that she has a real choice to make."

"As for the matter regarding the Moon people and their sexual urges... I had planned on telling her the truth once we returned to the Divine Heavens since she is already dealing with enough stress."

"I see... so that's why you didn't tell her about it." Tang Lingxi nodded with an understanding expression.

"Anyway, this loophole... It might be the turning point for your relationship with Qiuyue."

"That will depend entirely on her. In fact, I will act as though I don't know anything so that she won't feel as awkward."

"Whatever you feel is right, Su Yang."

The following morning, Su Yang left the Yin Yang Pavilion to cultivate with the disciples again.

After cultivating with the disciples, he went to cultivate with the Sect Elders.

"So you finally remember that I still exist." Sun Jingjing said with an unhappy expression on her face after seeing him at her door.

"Sorry, I've been busy recently."

"I'm only joking with you, Su Yang." She suddenly laughed. "Anyway, what brings you here today? Are you looking to cultivate with me?"

"You don't want me to?"

"I didn't say that!" She quickly responded before hugging his arm and pulling him into her house and then her room.

Once they were inside her room, Sun Jingjing fell on her bed with Su Yang still in her arms.

"You're more aggressive than usual. Did something happen?" Su Yang said with a smile.

However, Sun Jingjing did not immediately respond to his question and gave him a passionate kiss instead.

"Mmm~"

After kissing for a good moment, Sun Jingjing said, "I met with Lan Liqing just like you'd told me to... or should I call her Su Liqing? You should've told me earlier that she also received the family mark!"

"It wouldn't be fun if I told you everything, right?"

"It was too surprising! To think you were already cultivating with a Sect Elder as an Outer Court disciple! And it was even Elder Lan who was renowned for being the only virgin Sect Elder in the entire Sect!"

"So? What do you think of her?" Su Yang asked her.

"Hmm..." Hearing his question, Sun Jingjing began pondering with a serious expression.